JAMES PATTERSON

London Bridges

Chapter 1

Colonel Geoffrey Shafer loved his new life in Salvador, Brazil's thirdlargest city and some would say its most intriguing. It was definitely the most fun.

He had rented a plush six-bedroom villa directly across from Guarajuba Beach, where he spent his days drinking sweet caipirinhas and ice-cold Brahma beers, or sometimes playing tennis at the club. At night, Colonel Shafer—the psychopathic killer better known as the Weasel—was up to his old tricks, hunting on the dark, narrow, winding streets of the Old City. He had lost count of his kills in Brazil, and nobody in Salvador seemed to care, or even keep

At a few ticks past two in the morning, Shafer returned to the villa with a young and beautiful streetwalker who called herself Maria. What a gorgeous face the girl had, and a stunning brown body, especially for someone so young. Maria said she was

The Weasel picked a fat banana from

one of several plants in his yard. At this time of year he had his choice of

rehearsing for the next one.

only thirteen.

count. There hadn't been a single newspaper story about the disappearance of young prostitutes. Not one. Maybe it was true what they said of the people here—when they weren't actually partying, they were already

was sugar apple. As he plucked the fresh fruit he had the thought that there was always something ripe for the taking in Salvador. It was paradise. Or maybe it's hell and I'm the Devil, Shafer thought, and chuckled to himself.

coconut, guava, mango, and pinha, which

"For you, Maria," he said, handing her the banana. "We'll put it to good use."

The girl smiled knowingly, and the Weasel noticed her eyes—what perfect brown eyes. And all mine now—eyes, lips, breasts.

Just then, he spotted a small Brazilian monkey called a mico trying to work its way through a window screen and into his house. "Get out of here, you "G'wan! Beat it!"

There came a quick movement from out of the bushes, then three men jumped him. The police, he was certain,

thieving little bastard!" he yelled.

probably Americans. Alex Cross?

The cops were all over him, powerful arms and legs everywhere. He was struck down by a bat or a lead

was struck down by a bat, or a lead pipe, yanked back up by his full head of hair, then beaten unconscious.

"We caught him We caught the

"We caught him. We caught the Weasel, first try. That wasn't very hard," said one of the men. "Bring him inside."

Then he looked at the beautiful young girl, who was clearly afraid, rightly so. "You did a good job, Maria. You brought him to us." He turned to one of

his men. "Kill her."

A single gunshot ruptured the silence in the front yard. No one seemed to notice or care in Salvador.

Chapter 2

The Weasel just wanted to die now. He was hanging upside down from the ceiling of his own master bedroom. The room had mirrors everywhere, and he could see himself in several of the reflections.

He looked like death. He was naked, bruised and bleeding all over. His hands were tightly cuffed behind his back, his ankles bound together, cutting off the circulation. Blood was rushing to his head.

Hanging beside him was the young girl, Maria, but she had been dead for several hours, maybe as much as a day, judging by the terrible smell. Her brown stared right through him.

The leader of his captors, bearded, always squeezing a black ball in one

eyes were turned his way, but they

hand, squatted down so that he was only a foot or so from Shafer's face. He spoke softly, a whisper.

"What we did with some prisoners

when I was active—we would sit them down, rather politely, peacefully, and then nail their fucking tongues to a table. That's absolutely true, my weaselly friend. You know what else? Simply plusting being from the postrile.

plucking hairs . . . from the nostrils . . . the chest . . . stomach . . . genitals . . . it's more than a little bothersome, no? Ouch," he said as he plucked hairs from Shafer's naked body.

You literally rattle his brain, the sensitive organ itself. He feels as if his head will fly off. His body is on fire. I'm not exaggerating.

"Here, let me show you what I mean."

The terrible, unimaginably violent

shaking—while Geoffrey Shafer hung upside down—went on for nearly an

you? What do you want from me?" he

Finally he was cut down. "Who are

hour.

screamed.

"But I'll tell you the worst torture, in

my opinion, anyway. Worse than what you would have done to poor Maria. You grab the prisoner by both shoulders and shake violently until he convulses.

The head captor shrugged. "You're a tough bastard, but always remember, I found you. And I'll find you again if I need to. Do you understand?"

Geoffrey Shafer could barely focus his eyes, but he looked up to where he

thought the captor's voice had come

The bearded man's face bent close to

from. He whispered, "What . . . do you . . . want? Please?"

his. He seemed almost to smile. "I have a job, a most incredible job for you. Believe me, you were born for this." "Who are you?" the Weasel

whispered again through badly chapped and bleeding lips. It was a question he'd asked a hundred times during the torture.

asked a hundred times during the torture. "I am the Wolf," said the bearded

man. "Perhaps you've heard of me." Part One THE UNTHINKABLE

Chapter 3

On the sunny, blue-skied afternoon when one of them would die unexpectedly, needlessly, Frances and Dougie Puslowski were hanging sheets and pillowcases and the kids' play clothes out to dry in the noonday sun.

Suddenly U.S. Army soldiers began to arrive at their mobile-home park, Azure Views, in Sunrise Valley, Nevada. Lots of soldiers. A full convoy of U.S. jeeps and trucks came bouncing up the dirt road they lived on, and stopped abruptly. Troops poured out of the vehicles. The soldiers were heavily armed. They definitely meant business.

"What in the name of sweet Jesus is

Mine outside Wells and was still trying to get used to the domestic scene. But Dougie knew that he was failing pretty badly. He was almost always depressed, always grumpy and mean-spirited, and always short with poor Frances and the kids.

going on?" asked Dougie, who was currently on disability from the Cortey

Dougie noticed that the soldier boys and girls climbing out of their trucks were outfitted in battle dress uniform: leather boots, camouflage pants, olive T-shirts—the whole kit and caboodle, as if this were Iraq and not the ass end of Nevada. They carried M-16 rifles and ran toward the closest trailers with muzzles raised. Some of the soldiers

The desert wind was blowing pretty good, and their voices carried all the way to the Puslowskis' clothesline.

even looked scared themselves.

Frances and Dougie clearly heard "We're evacuating the town! This is an emergency situation. Everyone has to leave their houses now! Now, people!"

Frances Puslowski had the presence of mind to notice that all the soldiers were pretty much saying the same thing, as if they had rehearsed it, and that their tight, solemn faces sure showed that they

wouldn't take no for an answer. The Puslowskis' three-hundred-odd neighbors—some of them very odd—were already leaving their mobile homes, complaining about it but

The next-door neighbor, Delta Shore, ran over to Frances. "What's happening, hon? Why are all these soldiers here? My good God Almighty!

definitely doing as they were told.

Can you believe it? They must be from Nellis or Fallon or someplace. I'm a little scared, Frances. You scared, hon?"

The clothespin in Frances's mouth

finally dropped to the ground as she spoke to Delta. "They say that they're evacuating us. I've got to get the girls."

Then Frances ran inside the mobile

Then Frances ran inside the mobile home, and at 240-some pounds, she had believed her sprinting, or even jogging, days were far behind her.

"Madison Brett c'mere you two

"Madison, Brett, c'mere, you two. Nothin' to be scared of. We just have to leave for a while! It'll be fun. Like a movie. Get a move on, you two!"

The girls, ages two and four, appeared from the small bedroom where

on the Disney Channel. Madison, the oldest, offered her usual "Why? Why do we have to? I don't want to. I won't.

We're too busy, Momma."

they'd been watching Rolie Polie Olie

Frances grabbed her cell phone off the kitchen counter—and then the next really strange thing happened. She tried to get a line to the police, but there was nothing except loud static. Now that had never happened before, not that kind of

never happened before, not that kind of annoying, buzzy noise she was hearing. Was some kind of invasion going down? Something nuclear, maybe? "Damn it!" she snapped at the buzzing cell phone, and almost started to cry. "What is going on here?"

"You said a bad word!" Brett squeaked, but she also laughed at her

mother. She kind of liked bad words. It was as if her mother had made a mistake, and she loved it when adults made mistakes.

"Get Mrs. Summerkin and Oink," Frances told the girls, who would not leave the house without their two favorite lovies, not even if the infernal

leave the house without their two favorite lovies, not even if the infernal plague of Egypt had come to town. Frances prayed that it hadn't—but what had? Why was the U.S. Army swarming all over the place, waving scary guns in people's faces?

dead body, soldier! You hear me, now?"

That last voice was Dougie's! Now what was he up to?

"Dougie, come back in the house!"

Frances yelled. "Help me with these girls! Dougie, I need you in here."

There was a gunshot outside! A loud,

lightning-bolt crack exploded from one

she was, running again—and saw two U.S. Army soldiers standing over

Frances ran to the screen door—here

of the rifles.

Dougie's body.

She could hear her frightened

neighbors outside, verbalizing the very thoughts racing around in her head: "What's happened?" "Who says we have to leave?" "Tell us why!" "Over my Oh my God, Dougie isn't moving. Oh my God, oh my God! The soldiers had shot him down like a rabid dog. For nothing! Frances started to shiver and shake, then threw up lunch.

Her girls screeched, "Yuk, Mommy! Mommy, yuk! You threw up all over the kitchen!"

Then suddenly a soldier with a couple of days' facial growth on his chin kicked open the screen door and he was right in her face and he was screaming, "Get out of this trailer! Now! Unless you want to die, too."

The soldier had the business end of a gun pointed right at Frances. "I'm not kidding, lady," he said. "Tell the truth, I'd just as soon shoot you as talk to you."

Chapter 4

The job—the operation, the mission—was to wipe out an entire American town. In broad daylight.

It was some eerie, psycho gig. Dawn

of the Dead, either version, would be mild compared to this. Sunrise Valley, Nevada; population, 315 brave souls. Soon to be population, 0. Who was going to believe it? Well, hell, everybody would in less than about three minutes.

None of the men on board the small plane knew why the town was being targeted for extinction, or anything else about the strange mission, except that it paid extremely well, and all the money another's names. All they had been told was their individual tasks for the mission. Just their little piece of the puzzle. That's what it was called—their piece.

had been delivered to them up front. Hell, they didn't even know one

Michael Costa from Los Angeles was the munitions expert on board and he'd been instructed to make a "bootleg fuel-air bomb with some real firepower."

Okay, he could do that easily enough. His working model was the BLU-96,

often called a Daisy Cutter, which graphically described the end result. Costa knew that the bomb had originally been designed to clear away mine fields,

military landing zones. Then some really crazy, sick dude had figured out that the Daisy Cutter could wipe out people as easily as it could trees and boulders.

So now here he was inside an old,

as well as jungles and forests for

beat-to-hell cargo plane flying over the Tuscarora Mountain range toward Sunrise Valley, Nevada, and they were very close to T, for target.

He and his new best friends were

assembling the bomb right there on the plane. They even had a diagram showing how to do it, as if they were idiots. Assembling Fuel-Air Bombs for

Dummies.

The actual BLU-96 was a tightly controlled military weapon and

obtainable ingredients. Costa had purchased a thousand-gallon supplemental fuel bladder, then filled it with high-octane gas, fitted a dispersing device, and inserted dynamite sticks as an initiator. Next, he made a motion brake and trigger assembly using a parachutist's altitude-deployment device for parts. Simple stuff like that. Then, as he'd told the others on board the cargo plane, "You fly over the

target. You push the bomb out the payload door. You run like your pants

relatively hard to obtain, Costa knew. Unfortunately for everybody who lived, loved, ate, slept, and shit in Sunrise Valley, Daisy Cutters could also be assembled at home out of readily

ahead. Trust me, the Daisy Cutter will leave nothing but scorched earth below. Sunrise Valley will be a burn mark in the desert. A memory. Just you watch."

are on fire and there's an ocean up

Chapter 5

"Easy does it, gentlemen. No one is to be hurt. Not this time."

Nearly eight hundred miles away, the Wolf was watching in live time what was happening in the desert. What a flick! There were four cameras on the ground at Sunrise Valley that were pumping video footage to four monitors in the house in the Bel Air section of Los Angeles, where he was staying. For the moment, anyway.

He watched closely as the inhabitants of the mobile-home park were escorted by army personnel into waiting transport trucks. The clarity of the footage was very good. He could see

arms:NEVADA ARMY GUARD UNIT 72ND. Suddenly he spoke out loud, "Shit! Don't do that!" He started to squeeze the

the patches on the soldiers'

when he was anxious or angry, or both. One of the male civilians had pulled a gun and had it pointed at a soldier.

black handball rapidly in his fist, a habit

Incredibly dumb mistake! "You imbecile!" the Wolf shouted at

the screen.

An instant later the man with the handgun was dead, facedown in the desert dust, which actually made it easier to get the other retards from

Sunrise Valley into the transport trucks. Should have been part of the plan in the first place, the Wolf thought. But it hadn't been, so now it was a small problem. Then one of the handheld cameras

focused on a small cargo plane as it approached the town and circled overhead. This was just gorgeous to behold. The handheld was obviously on

board one of the army trucks, which were, he hoped, speeding out of range. It was amazing footage—black and white, which somehow made it even

more powerful. Black and white was more realistic, no? Yes—absolutely.

"Angels of death," he whispered.

"Beautiful image. I'm such an artist." It took two of them to push the

The handheld was steady on the plane as it glided in over the town.

Then the pilot banked a hard left, fire walled the engines, and climbed out of there as fast as he could. That was his job, his piece of the puzzle, and he'd done it very well. "You get to live," the

bladder of gas out the payload door.

The camera was on a wide angle now and captured the bomb as it slowly plummeted toward the town. Stunning footage. Scary as hell, too, even for him

to see. At approximately a hundred feet from the ground, the bomb detonated.

Wolf spoke to the video again.

"Ka-fucking-boom!" said the Wolf. It just came out of his mouth. Usually he wasn't this emotional about anything.

As he watched—couldn't take his eyes away—the Daisy Cutter leveled

Up to ten miles away windows blew out of buildings. The ground and buildings shook in Elko, Nevada, about thirty-five miles away. The explosion was heard in the next state.

And actually, much farther away than

that. Right there in Los Angeles, for instance. Because tiny Sunrise Valley,

everything within five hundred yards of the drop site. It also had the capacity to kill everything within an area that large, which it did. This was utter devastation.

Nevada, was just a test run.

"This is just a warm-up," said the Wolf. "Just the beginning of something great. My masterpiece. My payback."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 6

When everything started, I was blessedly out of the loop, on a four-day vacation to the West Coast, my first in over a year. First stop: Seattle, Washington.

Seattle is a beautiful, lively city that —in my opinion, anyway—nicely balances the funky old and the cyber new, with possibly a tip of a Microsoft cap to the future side of things. Under ordinary circumstances I would have looked forward to a visit there.

These were kind of shaky times, though, and I had only to look down at the small boy tightly holding on to my hand as we crossed Wallingford Avenue North to remember why.

I had only to listen to my heart.

The boy was my son Alex, and I was seeing him for the first time in four months. He and his mother lived in Seattle now. I lived in Washington,

D.C., where I was an FBI agent. Alex's mom and I were involved in a "friendly" custody struggle over our son, at least it was evolving that way after a very stormy couple of encounters.

"You having fun?" I asked little Alex, who still carried around Moo, a spotted black-and-white cow that had been his favorite toy when he lived with me in Washington. He was almost three, but already a smooth talker and even smoother operator. God, I loved this

was a gifted child—high intelligence, high creativity—and since Christine was an elementary-school teacher, and an excellent one, she would probably know.

Christine's place was in the Wallingford area of Seattle, and because

it's a pleasant walking neighborhood, Alex and I had decided to stay close to

little guy. His mother believed that he

home. We started out playing in the backyard, which was bordered with Douglas firs and had plenty of room, not to mention a view of the Cascade Mountains.

I took several pictures of the Boy,

per my instructions from Nana Mama. Alex wanted me to see his mother's was very well done, full of tomatoes, lettuce, and squash. The grass was neatly mown. Pots of rosemary and mint covered the kitchen windowsills. I took more pictures of Alex.

After our tour of the yard, we

vegetable garden, and as I expected, it

walked over to the Wallingford Playfield and had a catch-and-batting session, then it was the zoo, and then another hand-holding walk along nearby Green Lake. Alex was pumped up about the upcoming Seafair Kiddies Parade and didn't understand why I couldn't stay for it. I knew what was coming next and I tried to brace myself for it.

"Why do you always have to go

away?" he asked, and I didn't have a

familiar. I want to be with you every minute of every day, buddy, I wanted to say.

"I just do, buddy," I said. "But I'll be back soon. I promise. You know I keep

good answer. Just a sudden, terrible ache in my chest that was all too

my promises."

"Is it because you're a policeman?"
he asked. "Why you have to go away?"

"Yes. Partly. That's my job. I have to make money to buy VCRs and Pop-Tarts."

"Why don't you get another job?"

asked Alex.
"I'll think about it," I told him. Not a lie. I would. I had been thinking about

lie. I would. I had been thinking about my police career a lot lately. I'd even

talked to my doctor about it, my head doctor.

Finally, about 2:30, we made our way back to his house, which is a

restored Victorian, painted deep blue with white trim, in excellent condition. It's cozy and light and, I must admit, a nice place to grow up in—as is Seattle.

Little Alex even has a view of the Cascades from his room. What more could a boy ask for?

Maybe a father who is around more than once every few months? How about that?

Christine was waiting on the porch, and she welcomed us back warmly. This was such a switch from our last face-to-face in Washington. Could I trust

Christine? I guess I had to.

Alex and I had a final couple of hugs on the sidewalk. I took a few more

snapshots for Nana and the kids.

Then he and Christine disappeared inside, and I was on the outside, alone, walking back to my rental car with my hands stuffed deep in my pockets, wondering what it was all about, missing my small son already, missing him badly, wondering if it would always be as heartbreaking as this, knowing that

it would be.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 7

took a flight down to San Francisco to

After the visit with Alex in Seattle I

spend some time with Homicide Inspector Jamilla Hughes. She and I had been seeing each other for about a year. I missed Jam and needed to be with her.

She was good at making things all right.

Most of the way I listened to the fine vocals of Erykah Badu, then Calvin Richardson. They were good at making things right, too. Better, anyway.

As the plane got close to San

Francisco we were treated to a surprisingly clear view of the Golden Gate Bridge and the city's skyline. I spotted the Embarcadero and the

wait to see Jam. We'd been close ever since we worked a murder investigation together. The only problem: the two of us lived on different coasts. We liked our respective cities, and our jobs, and hadn't figured out where to go with that yet.

On the other hand, we definitely enjoyed being together, and I could see

Transamerica Building, and then I just let the scene wash over me. I couldn't

the joy on Jamilla's face as I spotted her near an exit at busy San Francisco International Airport. She was in front of a North Beach Deli, grinning, clapping her hands over her head, then jumping up and down. She has that kind of spirit and can get away with it.

saw her. She always has that effect on me. She was wearing a buttery soft leather car coat, light blue T, and black jeans and looked as though she'd come straight from work. But she looked good, really good.

I smiled and felt better as soon as I

She'd put on lipstick—and perfume, I discovered as I took her into my arms. "Oh yes," I said. "I missed you."

"Then hold me, hug me, kiss me," she said. "How was your boy? How was Alex?"

"He's getting big, smarter, funnier.

He's pretty great. I love that little guy. I miss him already, Jamilla."

"I know you do. I know you do,

baby. Give me that hug."

and I love holding her in my arms. I noticed a few people watching us, and most were smiling. How could they not? Then two of the spectators, a man and a woman in dark suits, walked up to us. Now what is this?

her around. She's five-nine and solid,

I picked Jam up off her feet and spun

The woman held up her badge for me to see: FBL

Oh no. No. Don't do this to me.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 8

I groaned and gently set down Jamilla, as if we had been doing something wrong instead of something very right. All the good feelings inside me evaporated in a hurry. Just like that. Wham, bam! I needed a break—and this wasn't going to be it.

"I'm Agent Jean Matthews; this is

Agent John Thompson," the woman said, gesturing to a thirty-something blond guy munching a Ghirardelli chocolate bar. "We hate to interrupt, to intrude, but we were sent out here to meet your plane. You're Alex Cross, sir?" she said, finally thinking to check.

"I'm Alex Cross. This is Inspector

front of her," I said.

Agent Matthews shook her head.

Hughes from the SFPD. You can talk in

"No, sir, I'm afraid I can't."

Jamilla patted my arm. "It's okay."

She walked away, leaving me with the two agents, which was the opposite of what I wanted to happen. I wanted them to walk away—far, far away.

to walk away—far, far away.

"What's this about?" I asked Agent
Matthews. I already knew it was
something bad, which was an ongoing

something bad, which was an ongoing problem with my current job. FBI Director Burns had my schedule and itinerary at all times, even when I was off duty, which effectively meant that I was never off duty.

"As I said, sir, we were told to meet

Nevada. There's an emergency out there. A small town was bombed. Well, the town was blown off the map. The director wants you on the scene like an

you. Then to put you right on a plane to

director wants you on the scene, like, an hour ago. It's a terrible disaster."

I was shaking my head, feeling incredible disappointment and frustration as I walked over to where

Jamilla stood. I felt as if there was a hole in the center of my chest. "There's been a bombing in Nevada. They say it's on the news. I have to go out there," I told her. "I'll try to get back as soon as I can. I'm sorry. You have no idea how sorry I am."

sorry I am."

The look on her face said it all. "I understand," she said. "Of course I

understand. You have to go. Come back if you can." I tried to hug her, but Jamilla backed

away, finally giving me a small, sad

wave. Then she turned and left without saying another word, and I think I knew that I had just lost her, too.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 9

I was on the move, but the whole scene felt more than frustrating—it was actually surreal. I flew by private jet from San Francisco to a small town in Nevada, and from there caught a ride in an FBI helicopter to what had once been Sunrise Valley.

I was trying not to think about little Alex, trying not to think about Jamilla, but so far it wasn't working. Maybe once I got to the bomb site? Once I was there in the action, in the middle of the shit.

I could tell by the way the local agents deferred to, and fussed around, me that my reputation, or the fact that I worked out of Washington, was making

Bureau's troubleshooters, that I was his troubleshooter. I wouldn't carry tales back to Washington, but the agents in the field offices didn't know that. How

could they?

them nervous and edgy. Director Burns had made it clear that I was one of the

The helicopter ride to the bombing site took only about ten minutes. From the air, I could see emergency lights all around Sunrise Valley, or what had been Sunrise Valley. The town was gone now.

There was still smoke, but no fire was visible from the air, possibly because there was nothing left to burn.

It was a little past eight o'clock.

It was a little past eight o'clock. What the hell had happened out here? And why would somebody go to the

town like Sunrise Valley?

I had been briefed as soon as I stepped inside the FBI helicopter.
Unfortunately, there wasn't too much

information available. At four that

trouble of destroying a hole-in-the-wall

afternoon, the residents—except for one male who'd been shot—had been "evacuated" by what appeared to be U.S. Army national guardsmen. The townspeople were then driven forty miles away to a point halfway to the nearest large town, Elko. Their location was called in to the Nevada State Police. By the time the troopers arrived

to assist the badly frightened townies, the army trucks and jeeps were gone. And so was the town of Sunrise Valley. I mean, there was nothing down there but sand, sage, and scrub.

Blown off the map.

I could see fire trucks, vans, off-road vehicles, maybe half a dozen helicopters. As our copter began to

settle down I spotted techies in chemical protective overgarments.

Jesus, what happened here?

Chemical warfare?

War?
Is that a possibility? In this day and

Is that a possibility? In this day and age? Of course it is.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 10

It was probably the scariest thing I'd ever seen in my years as a police officer—total desolation, without apparent rhyme or reason.

As soon as we touched down and I climbed out of the helicopter, I was outfitted in chemical protective overgarments, CPOGs, including a gas mask and other gear. The rubber mask was state-of-the-art, with dual eyepieces and an internal drinking tube for replenishing fluids. I felt like a character in a scary Philip K. Dick story. But it didn't last too long. I took the unwieldy mask off as soon as I saw a couple of army officers roaming around without We got a possible break soon after I arrived. A couple of rock climbers had spotted a man using a video camera to film the explosion. He looked

theirs.

suspicious, and one of the climbers had photographed the man with his digital camera. The climbers also had shots of the town's evacuation.

Two of our agents were interviewing the climbers, and I also wanted to talk to them as soon as the agents had finished.

them as soon as the agents had finished. Unfortunately, the local police had gotten to the camera first and were holding it until their chief arrived at the scene. He was late, because he'd been away on a hunting trip.

When the chief finally got there, in

over him. I started talking before he had even climbed out of his car. "Chief, your men are holding important evidence. We need to see it," I

said, not raising my voice at the sixtyish,

an old black Dodge Polaris, I was all

potbellied man but making sure he got the point. "This is a federal investigation now. I'm here representing both the FBI and Homeland Security. We've lost valuable time because of your men." To his credit, the police chief himself was exasperated. He began

To his credit, the police chief himself was exasperated. He began yelling at his officers. "Bring the evidence over here, you morons. What the hell are you two trying to pull? What were you thinking? Do you think? Bring the evidence."

His men came running, and the taller of the two, who I later learned was the chief's son-in-law, handed over the camera. It was a Canon PowerShot and I knew how to get at the pictures. So what do we have here? The first

photos. No people in any of them. Closeups and wide-angle shots. Then came pictures of the actual

shots were well-composed nature

evacuation. Unbelievable. Then I finally got my first look at the

man who had filmed the explosion.

His back was to the camera. At first he was standing, but in the next few

shots he was down on one knee.

Probably to get a better angle. I don't know what had prompted the mystery man was videotaping the deserted town—then suddenly it went up in flames that rose several hundred feet high. It seemed pretty clear that he had known about the attack before it happened.

rock climber to take the initial few shots, but his instincts were pretty good. The

The next photograph showed the man turning in the direction of the climbers. He actually began to walk toward them, or so it appeared on film. I wondered if he'd spotted one of them taking his picture. He seemed to be looking their way.

That was when I saw his face, and I couldn't believe what I was looking at. I recognized him. And why not? I'd been

for more than a dozen murders here and in Europe. He was a vicious psychopath, one of the worst of his kind still on the loose anywhere in the world. His name was Geoffrey Shafer, but I

chasing him for years. He was wanted

knew him better as the Weasel. What was he doing here?

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 11

There were a couple more crystalclear shots as the hateful Weasel got closer to the photographer.

Just the sight of him sent my brain reeling, and I felt a little sick. My mouth was dry, and I kept licking my lips. What is Shafer doing here? What connection does he have to the bomb that leveled this small town? It was crazy, felt like a dream, completely unreal.

I'd first come across Colonel

I'd first come across Colonel Geoffrey Shafer in Washington three years ago. He'd murdered more than a dozen people there, though we could never prove it. He would pose as a cabdriver, usually in Southeast, where I knew D.C. police investigations weren't as thorough when the victims were poor and black. Shafer also had a day job—he was an army colonel working inside the British embassy. On the face of it, he couldn't have been more respectable. And yet he was a horrible murderer, one

lived. The prey was easy to grab, and he

of the worst pattern killers I'd ever come across.

A local agent named Fred Wade

joined me near the helicopter I'd come in on. I was still studying the climber's photos. Wade told me he wanted to know what was going on, and I couldn't blame him. So did I

know what was going on, and I couldn't blame him. So did I. "The man who videotaped the explosion is named Geoffrey Shafer," I have no idea why, but it makes my head hurt just to think about it."

I took out my cell phone and put in a call to Washington. As I described what I'd discovered, I was reviewing the last few photographs taken of Colonel Shafer. In one of the photos he was climbing into a red Ford Bronco.

The next was a rear shot of the

Bronco as it rode away. Jesus. The

license plate was visible.

told Wade. "I know him. He committed several murders in D.C. when I was a homicide detective there. The last we heard of him, he'd fled to London. He murdered his wife in front of their children in a London market. Then he disappeared. Well, I guess he's back. I

And that was the strangest thing of all so far: the Weasel had made a mistake. The Weasel I'd known didn't make

them. So maybe it wasn't a mistake after

all. Maybe it was part of a plan.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 12

The Wolf was still in Los Angeles, but reports were coming in from the Nevada desert on a regular basis. Police arriving near Sunrise Valley . . . then helicopters . . . the U.S. Army . . . finally the FBI.

His old friend Alex Cross was out there now, too. Good for Alex Cross. What a good soldier.

Nobody understanding a goddamn thing, of course.

No coherent theory about what had happened in the desert.

How could there be?

It was chaos, and that was the beauty of it. Nothing scared people more than

what they didn't understand. Case in point, a local L.A. hot shit

named Fedya Abramtsov and his wife, Liza. Fedya wanted to be a big Mafiya gangster, but also lead the life of a movie-star type in Beverly Hills. This

was Fedya and Liza's house that he was staying in now, but really, the Wolf thought of it as his house; after all, their money was his money. Without him, they were nothing but small-time punks with big ambitions.

Fedya and Liza hadn't even known he was at their house. The couple had been at their place in Aspen and finally got back to L.A. at just past ten that evening.

Imagine their surprise.

A powerful-looking man sitting by

They had never seen him before. "Who the hell are you?" demanded Liza. "What are you doing here?"

The Wolf spread his arms. "I am the

himself in the living room. Just sitting there. So peaceful. Rhythmically squeezing a rubber ball in his right hand.

one who gave you all of this wonderful stuff. And what do you give me in return? Disrespect like this? I am the Wolf." Fedya had heard enough already. He

knew that if the Wolf was there, letting himself be seen, then he and Liza were as good as dead. Best to run and hope to God the Wolf is here alone, unlikely as that may be.

He took a single step, and the Wolf

"Not so common, so Americanized. Come and sit. Come. Please."

The Wolf patted his lap. "Come. I don't like to repeat myself."

The girl was a pretty one—smart,

too—and apparently ruthless as a snake. She walked across the room and sat in the Wolf's lap. She did as she was told,

"I like you, Yelizaveta. But what

choice do I have—you've disobeyed me.

Liza, which he knew to be a nickname of hers. "I prefer Yelizaveta," he said.

raised a handgun from out of the seat cushion. He was good with a gun. He shot Fedya Abramtsov once in the back,

"He's very dead," he calmly said to

once in the back of his neck.

anyway. Good girl.

argue. I know it's true." He looked into her beautiful brown eyes. "Do you know zamochit?" he asked. "The breaking of bones?"

You and Fedya stole my money. Don't

Apparently Yelizaveta did, because she screamed at the top of her lungs. "This is good," said the Wolf as he

grabbed the woman's slender left wrist. "Everything is going so well today."

He started with Yelizaveta's little finger, just the pinkie.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 13

Had a war started? If it had, who was the enemy?

It was pitch-black, and it was freezing cold in the desert. Scary and disorienting, to put it mildly. No moon out. Was that part of the plan? What was supposed to happen next? Where? To whom? Why?

I tried to collect my thoughts and make a rough plan to take us through the next few hours in at least a semiorganized manner. Difficult to do, maybe impossible. We were looking for a small convoy of army trucks and jeeps that seemed to have disappeared, to have been gobbled up by the desert. But also

tags 322JBP and a sunset design.

And we were looking for Geoffrey Shafer. Why would the Weasel be here?

a Ford Bronco with the Nevada license

While we waited for something to break, maybe a message or a warning, I walked around what had been Sunrise Valley. Where the bomb had actually detonated, buildings and vehicles hadn't just been flattened, they'd been practically vaporized. Little bits of death and destruction, sparks and ash, were still floating in the air. The night sky was masked by a dark and oily cloud of smoke, and I was struck by the unsettling idea that only man could create something like this, and only man would want to.

As I wandered through the mounds of debris, I also talked to agents and techs involved in the investigation and I began to make a few crime-scene notes of my own:

Bits and pieces of the mobile-home camp are scattered everywhere.

Witnesses describe canisters

One falling can seemed about to

strike a trailer home, then exploded in midair above the town.

At first, the explosion was like a

"white, undulating jellyfish cloud," then the cloud ignited.

High winds from the heat of the fire, convection whirls, apparently blew at gale force for several minutes.

so far. But especially Shafer's presence.

One of the local FBI agents, Ginny Moriarity, called out my name and I turned. She waved excitedly for me to come over. Now what?

I jogged back to where Agent

Moriarity was standing with a couple of local cops. They all seemed exercized

"We found the Bronco," she told me.

"No army trucks, but we located the

So far we had discovered only one

It just didn't make sense. Nothing did

body in the rubble. Everyone was wondering the same thing: why only one? Why spare the others? Why blow

up this trailer-park town at all?

about something.

Bronco in Wells."

"What's in Wells?" I asked Moriarity. "An airport."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 14

"Let's go!"

I was back in the FBI helicopter and headed to Wells in a hurry, hoping to catch up with the Weasel. It seemed like a long shot, but we didn't have anything else. Agents Wade and Moriarity traveled with me. They didn't want to miss this—whatever was waiting in Wells.

As we pulled up and away from what remained of Sunrise Valley, I was aware of the high desert; the former town was at an elevation over 4,000 feet.

Then I tuned out the surroundings and started thinking about Shafer, trying once

in Bermuda; at the time, Christine and I were engaged to be married. Neither of us knew it, but she was pregnant with Alex when Shafer abducted her. We were never the same after her rescue. John Sampson, my best friend, and I found her in Jamaica. Christine was emotionally scarred, and, of course, I

again to figure what could possibly tie him to this mess, this disaster, this murder scene. Three years before, Shafer had kidnapped Christine Johnson. It had happened during a family vacation

struggle.
Who was he working with? One

couldn't blame her. Then she moved out to Seattle, where she lived with Alex. And I blamed Shafer for the custody were, but we did know that they weren't real army national guardsmen. Sources at the Pentagon had helped confirm that much. Then there was the matter of the bomb that had leveled the town. Who made it? Probably somebody with

thing was obvious, and probably useful to the investigation: the firebombing at Sunrise Valley had involved a lot of people. So far we didn't know who the men and women posing as U.S. Army

colonel in the British army, but he'd also served as a mercenary. Lots of interesting connections, but nothing very clear yet.

military experience. Shafer had been a

The helicopter pilot turned to me.

"We should be in visual contact with

Wells as soon as we clear these mountains up ahead. We'll see lights, anyway. But so will they. I don't think we can sneak up on anybody out here in the desert."

I nodded to him. "Just try to land as close as you can to the airport. We'll coordinate with the state troopers. We might draw fire," I added.

"Understood," the pilot said.

I started to discuss our options with Wade and Moriarity. Should we try to land at the airport itself, or nearby in the desert? Had either of them fired their weapons before, or been fired on? I found out that they hadn't. Neither of them. Terrific.

The pilot turned to us again. "Here

we go. Airport should be coming up on our right. There."

Suddenly I could see a small airfield

with a two-story building and what looked like two airstrips. I spotted cars, maybe half a dozen, but I didn't see a red Bronco yet.

Then I saw a small private plane taxiing and getting ready for takeoff.

Shafer? It didn't seem likely to me, but neither did anything else so far. "I thought we shut down Wells?" I

called to the pilot.

"So did I. Maybe this is our boy. If it

"So did I. Maybe this is our boy. If it is, he's gone. That's a Learjet 55 and it moves pretty damn good."

From that moment on, there was very little we could do but watch. The Learjet

looking back at the FBI helicopter, maybe giving us the finger. Or was he giving me the finger? Could he know that I was there?

A few minutes later we were on the ground at Wells. Almost immediately I got the jolting news that the Learjet was

shot down one of the runways, then it was airborne, winging away from us and making it look ridiculously easy. I could imagine Geoffrey Shafer on board,

asked the two techies inside the tiny Wells control room.

The older of the two answered.

"What do you mean 'off radar'?" I

off radar.

"What I mean is that the jet seems to have disappeared off the face of the

earth. It's like it was never here."

But the Weasel had been there— I'd seen him. And I had photographs to prove it.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 15

Geoffrey Shafer drove a dark blue Oldsmobile Cutlass full-bore through the desert. He wasn't on board the jet that had flown out of Wells, Nevada. That would have been too easy. Weasels always have several escape routes planned.

As he drove, Shafer was thinking that the oddly brilliant plan in the desert had worked well, and there had certainly been backup contingencies just in case something didn't work right. He had also learned that Dr. Cross, now with the FBI, had shown up in Nevada.

Is that part of the big picture, too? Somehow, he expected that it was. But

why Cross? What does the Wolf have in mind for him?

The Weasel eventually made a stop

in Fallon, Nevada, where he was scheduled to make his next contact. He

didn't know exactly who he was contacting, or why, or where this whole operation was leading. He just knew his piece—and his explicit orders were to call in from Fallon and get the next set of

instructions.

So he followed his orders, registered at the Best Inn Fallon, and went straight to his room. He used a cell phone, which he'd been told to destroy after he made the call. There were no pleasantries exchanged, no unnecessary words. Just the business at hand.

contact was made, and Shafer wondered if that was so. According to rumor, the real Wolf had impersonators, maybe even body doubles. All of them with their piece, right?

"This is the Wolf," he heard as

Next he heard disturbing news. "You

spotted and photographed near Sunrise Valley. Did you know that?"

At first, Shafer tried to deny it, but

were seen, Colonel Shafer. You were

he was cut off.

"We're looking at copies of the

pictures right now. That's how the Bronco was followed to Wells. Which is why we told you to exchange vehicles outside town and drive to Fallon. Just in case something went wrong."

could he have been spotted out in the middle of nowhere? Why was Cross there? The Wolf finally laughed. "Oh, don't

Shafer didn't know what to say. How

worry your pretty head, Colonel. You were supposed to be spotted. The photographer works for us. "Now proceed to your next contact

point in the morning. And have some fun tonight in Fallon. Paint the town,

Colonel. I want you to go and kill somebody out in the desert. You choose

a victim. Do your stuff. That's an order."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 16

The level of frustration and tension I was feeling was increasing by the hour, and so was the general confusion about the case. I'd never seen so much chaos, so fast, in my entire life.

Almost a full day after the bombing, there was nothing but a hole in the ground in the Nevada desert, and a couple of questionable leads. We had talked to the three hundred or so residents of Sunrise Valley, but none of the survivors had a clue, either. Nothing unusual had happened in the days before the bombing; no stranger had visited. We hadn't found the army vehicles or discovered where they had come from. still didn't make sense. Neither did Colonel Geoffrey Shafer's being there. But it sure shook us up.

What had happened in Sunrise Valley

No one had even taken credit for the bombing yet.

After two days, there wasn't too

much more I could do out in the desert, so I caught a ride home to Washington. I found Nana, the kids, even Rosie the cat out on the front porch, waiting for me.

Home, sweet home again. Why didn't

I just learn a lesson and stay there?

"This is real nice," I said, beaming as I bounded up the steps. "A welcoming committee. I guess everybody missed me, right? How long you been out here waiting for your pops?"

Nana and the kids shook their heads pretty much in unison, and I smelled conspiracy.

Nana said, "Of course we're glad to see you, Alex," and finally cracked a smile. They all did. Conspiracy, for sure.

smile. They all did. Conspiracy, for sure.

"Gotcha!" said Jannie, who was ten.

She had on a crocheted sun hat with her

braids hanging out. "Of course we're your welcoming committee. Of course we missed you, Daddy. Who wouldn't?"

"Got you bad!" Damon taunted from

his perch on the rail. He was twelve and looked the part. Sean John T-shirt, straight-leg jeans, Hiptowns.

I pointed a finger at him. "I'll get you, you break my porch rail." Then I

smiled. "Gotcha!" I said to Damon.

After that, I had to answer all sorts of questions about little Alex and show

around my digital camera with dozens of pictures of our beloved little man.

Everybody was pretty much laughing now, which was better, and it was

definitely good to be home again, even if I was still waiting for more news about the bombing in Nevada and about Shafer's involvement.

Nana had held dinner for me, and

Nana had held dinner for me, and after a delicious meal of roast chicken with garlic and lemon, squash, mushrooms, and onions, the family congregated in the kitchen over cleanup and bowls of ice cream. Jannie showed off a pen-and-ink of her heroes Venus

sensational; eventually, we watched the Washington Wizards on TV. Finally, everybody started to wander off to bed, but there were hugs and kisses first. Nice, very nice. Much, much better than yesterday and, I was willing to bet, not as good as tomorrow.

and Serena Williams, which was

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 17

About eleven, I finally climbed the steep stairs to my office in the attic. I reviewed my case file on Sunrise Valley for twenty minutes or so in preparation for the next day, then I called Jamilla in San Francisco. I'd talked to her a couple of times over the past two days, but I'd mostly been too busy. I figured she might be home from work by now.

All I got was a voice message, though.

I don't like to leave messages myself, especially since I'd already left a couple from Nevada, but I finally said, "Hi, it's Alex. I'm still trying to sell you on the idea of forgiving me for what happened

at the airport in San Francisco. If you want to come East sometime soon, I'm buying the plane ticket. Talk to you soon. I miss you, Jam. Bye."

I hung up the phone, then let out the sigh I'd been holding in. I was blowing it again, wasn't I? Hell, yes, I was. Why would I do such a thing?

size piece of corn bread that Nana had made for the next day. It didn't help, just made me feel even worse, guilty about my eating habits. I sat on a kitchen chair

I went downstairs and ate a double-

with Rosie the cat in my lap, stroking her.

"You like me, right? Don't you,

Rosie? I'm kind of a nice guy?"

The phone calls weren't over for the

from one of the agents I'd worked with out in Nevada. Fred Wade had something he thought I might find interesting. "We just got this from Fallon," he told me. "Receptionist in a Best Inn there was raped and murdered two nights ago. Her body was left in the

brush near the motel parking lot. Like we were supposed to find it. We got a

night. Just past midnight I received a call

description of a guest who could be your Colonel Shafer. Needless to say, he's long gone from Fallon."

Your Colonel Shafer. That said it all, didn't it? He's long gone from Fallon. Of course he was.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 18

I didn't sleep much that night. I think I had awful nightmares about the Weasel. And about the holocaust in Sunrise Valley, Nevada.

Early the next morning I had to sign

permission slips so the kids could go on a field trip to the National Aquarium in Baltimore. I signed the slips at fourthirty before they were up and while the house was still dark, then I had to sneak off to work. I didn't get to say good-bye, and I don't like that, but I left love notes for Jannie and Damon. Such a nice pops, right?

I drove to work with Alicia Keys and Calvin Richardson on the CD, good

being run out of FBI headquarters in D.C. Since 9/11, the Bureau had shifted dramatically—from what some people felt was a reactive, investigative

organization to a much more proactive and effective one. A recent addition, a \$6 million software package at the Hoover Building, included a 40-million-

company for the trip and whatever lay

These days, Major Threats was

ahead

page terrorism database dating back to the '93 bombing of the World Trade Center. We had a blizzard of information; now it was time to see if any of it was

worth a damn.

About a dozen of us met on the

the Strategic Information and Operations Center command on the fifth floor. The obliteration of the small town had been listed as a "major threat," even though we had no way to tell whether it was. So far, we didn't have a single clue as to what Sunrise Valley was really about.

subject of Sunrise Valley that morning in

There still hadn't been any contact with the bombers, not a word from them.
Surreal. And probably scarier than if

Surreal. And probably scarier than if we had heard from them.

This particular conference room was

This particular conference room was one of the jazzier and more comfortable ones: lots of blue leather armchairs, a

dark wooden table, wine-colored rug. Two flags—an American and a DOJ—lots of crisp white shirts and striped ties

I had on jeans and a navy windbreaker that read,FBI TERRORISM TASK FORCE. And I felt

around the table.

that I was the only one dressed correctly for the day. This case sure wasn't going to be business as usual.

The room was loaded with heavy

hitters, though. The highest-ranking person was Burt Manning, one of the five executive assistant directors at the Bureau. Also present were senior agents from the National Joint Terrorism Task Force, as well as the top analyst from the new Office of Intelligence, which combined experts from the Bureau and the CIA.

My partner for the morning was

Monnie Donnelley, a superior analyst and a good friend from my time at Quantico.

"I see you got your personal

invitation," I said as I sat down beside Monnie. "Welcome to the party."

"Oh, I wouldn't miss this. It's like

sci-fi, or something. It's so weird, Alex."
"Yeah, it's all of that."
On the screen at the front of the room was the special agent in charge from the

Las Vegas field office. The SAC was reporting in about the mobile crime lab that had been set up inside the town limits of what had been Sunrise Valley. She didn't have much new, though, and the meeting quickly moved on to threat assessment.

This was where everything got a lot more interesting.

First, there was a discussion of

domestic terrorist groups such as the National Alliance and the Aryan Nations. But nobody really believed those simpletons could be responsible

for something as well planned as this.

Next up was the latest on al Qaeda and Hezbollah, the radical jihad movement. These groups received a solid couple of hours of heated discussion. They were

definitely suspects. Then formal

assignments were given out by Manning.

I didn't get an assignment, which made me wonder if I would be hearing from Director Burns soon. I didn't particularly want to hear from him on

Washington again, especially back to Nevada And then it got really wild. Every pager in the conference room went off simultaneously! Within seconds, everybody had checked his pager, myself included. For the past several months all terror threats got flashed to senior agents, whether it

this one. I didn't want to travel out of

was a suspicious package on a New York subway or an anthrax threat in L.A. The message on my pager read:

MISSILES MISSING AT KIRTLAND

SURFACE-TO-AIR TWO

AIR FORCE BASE

ALBUQUERQUE.

CONNECTION **SUNRISE** TO

VALLEY SITUATION **BEING** INVESTIGATED. WILL KEEP INFORMED.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 19

No rest for the righteous, read a placard on the wall near the canteen and soda machines. At 5:50 that night, we were called back to the conference room on the fifth floor. The same august group as before. Some of us were guessing that the Bureau had finally been contacted by whoever was responsible for the bombing of Sunrise Valley. Others thought this might have to do with the missile thefts from Kirtland.

A few minutes later, half a dozen agents from the CIA arrived. All in suits with briefcases. Uh-oh. Then came half a dozen hitters from Homeland Security. Things were definitely getting more

"This is getting hinky," Monnie Donnelley whispered to me. "It's one thing to talk the talk about interagency cooperation. But the CIA is really here."

I smiled over at Monnie. "You're sure in a good mood."

She shrugged. "As General Patton

used to say about the battlefield, 'God

serious now.

help me, I do love it so!"

Director Burns entered the room precisely at six. He walked in with Thomas Weir, the head of the CIA, and Stephen Bowen from Homeland Security. The three heavies looked extremely uneasy. Maybe just being there together did it—which succeeded in making all of us nervous, too.

front. It was the veterans' way of showing that they'd been here before. Had they? Had anyone? I didn't think so. "Can I have your attention," Director Burns said, and the room immediately went quiet. All eyes were glued to the front.

Burns let the quiet settle in, and then

Monnie and I exchanged another

look. A few agents continued to talk, even as the directors took their places in

"I want to bring you up to speed. The first contact that we received on this situation was two days before the bombing in Sunrise Valley, Nevada. The initial message concluded with the words 'it is our hope that no one will be

he continued.

hinted at. We were also instructed not to mention the initial contact to anyone. We were warned that if we did, there would be serious consequences, though these consequences were never spelled out for us."

Burns paused and looked around the room. He made eye contact with me,

injured during the violence.' The nature of 'the violence' wasn't revealed or even

And who else was involved? The White House? I would think so.

"We have been contacted every day since then. One message went to Mr. Bowen, one to Director Weir, and one to

me. Until today, nothing of consequence

nodded, then moved on. I wondered how much he knew that the rest of us didn't. each of us received a film of the bombing in Nevada. The film had been edited. I'll share it with you now."

Burns made a rapid, circular hand signal and a video began to play on the

had been revealed. But this morning

half a dozen monitors around the room. The film was in black and white; it was grainy and looked handheld, like news footage. Like war footage, actually. The room was very quiet as we watched the video.

From a distance of a mile or more, one camera angle revealed the army trucks and jeeps arriving in Sunrise Valley. Moments later the mystified residents were escorted from their mobile homes into the trucks.

A man pulled a handgun and was shot dead in the street. Douglas Puslowski, I knew. The convoy then drove off quickly,

raising great clouds of dust. In the next shot, a large, dark object

tumbled into view from the sky. While it was still in the air, there was an incredible explosion.

The film of the actual bombing had also been edited but showed footage from only a single camera. The editing was mostly a series of jump cuts. Jarring, but effective.

This was followed by a long shot of the explosion. The plane that delivered

the bomb was never in the shot. "They filmed the whole damn thing," "The person making the calls has been using phone cards from public phones. Crude but effective. So far, the calls have originated from grocery stores, movie theaters, bowling alleys. Pretty much untraceable, as you know."

We sat mostly in silence for a minute

Burns said. "They wanted us to know that they were there, that they are the ones who bombed the town out of existence. In a few minutes they're going to tell us why. They'll call on the phone.

Then the quiet was broken—the phone at the front of the room began to ring.

or two. There were only a few private

conversations going on.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 20

"This will be on speaker for everyone to hear," Burns told us. "They said it was permissible, even advisable for all of you to be here. In other words, they expected an audience. They're very big on rules, as you'll see."

"Who the hell is they?" Monnie whispered up close to my ear. "See, it is sci-fi. Aliens, maybe? That's my bet going in."

"We'll know in a minute, won't we? I'm not betting against you."

Director Burns pushed a button on his console, and a male voice came over the speakers. The voice was heavily filtered.

"Good evening. This is the Wolf," we heard.

The hair on the back of my neck rose immediately. I knew the Wolf; I'd chased

him for nearly a year. In fact, I'd never known a more ruthless killer. "I'm the one responsible for the destruction of Sunrise Valley. I'd like to

explain myself—at least, as much as you deserve to know. Or should I say, as

much as I want you to know at this time." Monnie looked over at me and shook her head. She knew the Wolf, too. The news couldn't have been worse if the

call had come straight from hell.

"It's good to be able to talk to all of you, so many self-important people gathered together just to listen to my Security," the Wolf continued. "I'm so very impressed. Humbled, actually."
"Do you want us to talk, or listen?"

ramblings. The FBI, CIA, Homeland

Burns asked. "Who am I speaking to? Who was

that just now? Would you mind identifying yourself?"
"It's Director Burns, FBI. I'm with

Director Weir of the CIA and Stephen Bowen of Homeland Security."

There was a crackling sound over the speakers that might have been a laugh. "Well, I'm just so very honored again, Mr. Burns. I'd have thought you

again, Mr. Burns. I'd have thought you would assign a lackey to speak to me. At first, anyway. Someone like Dr. Cross. But, you know, it's better that we talk

Weir from the CIA said, "You specifically requested 'the first team' in your earlier contact. Believe me, this is the first team. We're taking the bombing

incident in Nevada seriously."

top-to-top. That's always best, don't you

think?"

"You actually listened. I'm impressed. I've heard that about you, Mr. Weir. Although I foresee some possible problems between us in the future."
"Why is that?" Weir asked.

"You're the CIA. Not to be trusted.

Not for a minute . . . Don't you read your Graham Greene? Who else is on your first team?" the Wolf asked. "Stand up and be counted."

Burns went around the room, listing

who was present. He omitted a couple of agents, and I wondered why. "Excellent choices, for the most

part," the Wolf said once Burns had finished the roll call. "I'm sure you know who to trust, and who not to, who you can depend on—with your very lives.

Personally, I'm not keen on the CIA, but that's just me. I find them to be liars and unnecessarily dangerous. Does anyone there disagree?" No one spoke, and the speakers

crackled with the Wolf's laughter. "That's interesting, don't you think? Even the CIA doesn't disagree with my scathing indictment."

Suddenly the Wolf's tone changed. "Now listen closely to what I have to important thing now, you have to listen to me. Many lives can be saved if you do. And you must obey. "Does everyone get that? Listen and obey? I want to hear you. Please, speak

up. Do all of you fucking understand?"

Everyone spoke at once, and

tell you, you morons. That's the

we understood that the Wolf was showing us he was in control, total control.

Burns suddenly spoke in a loud voice, "He's gone! He hung up! He's off the line, the son of a bitch!"

although it seemed absurd and childish,

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 21

We waited like his puppets in the conference room, but the Russian mobster didn't make contact again. I knew the bastard well, and I didn't expect him to call us back. He was playing with us now.

Eventually I went back to my office, and Monnie Donnelley headed to Virginia. I still hadn't been assigned to the case—not officially, anyway. But the Wolf had known I would be there in the crisis room. He'd singled me out for a gratuitous insult. Just his style.

What was he up to? A mobster using terror tactics? Starting a war? If a small group of madmen in the desert could do

it, why not the Russian Mafiya? All it seemed to take was a ruthless enough leader, and money.

I waited and wondered if the terrible

uncertainty I felt was part of the Russian's plan to increase the pressure and stress. To control us? Test our patience?

And, of course, I thought about

Geoffrey Shafer and how he might be connected. What was that all about? I'd already pulled up most of the recent data on Shafer. We had put an old girlfriend of Shafer's—his therapist—under surveillance. Her name was Elizabeth Cassady and I was trying to get a look at the notes from her therapy sessions with Shafer.

talked to Nana. She accused me of eating her corn bread and I blamed it on Damon, which got a cackle out of her. "You have to take responsibility for your

Later, I checked in at home and

actions," she scolded. "Oh, I take full responsibility," I told her. "I ate the corn bread, and I'm glad. It

Shortly after I got off the phone I was called down to a meeting in the crisis room. Tony Woods from the director's

was delicious."

"There have been new developments," he began in a solemn tone. "All hell has broken loose in Europe."

office addressed a roomful of agents.

Tony Woods paused, then went on:

"There were two more terrible

"One bombing took place in the northern part of England, in Northumberland, near the border with Scotland. The village of Middleton Hall—population, four hundred plus—is no more." Woods paused. "This time the

townspeople weren't evacuated. We don't know why. There were close to a

firebombings about an hour ago. Both

were in Western Europe.

it on for you to see."

hundred casualties. It was a horrible bloodbath. Whole families died—men, women, and some children.

"We have already received a filmed segment from Scotland Yard. A local policeman took it from the Cheviots, which are a range of nearby hills. I'll put

and I grew up here in Middleton Hall, which is gone. There was a single main street, a couple of pubs and shops, houses of people I knew. There used to be an old Royal Engineers bridge into town, but that was blown up. Our local pub—gone. As I stand here, looking over this wasteland, I am reminded of why I am a Christian. What I feel most is

Following the moving tape, Tony

Woods told us about the bombing that had taken place in Germany. He said he had no accompanying videotape as yet.

hopelessness about our world."

We sat and watched the short film in

total, stunned silence. At the end, the local policeman himself spoke to the camera. "My name is Robert Wilson,

quite as horrifying, but it's bad. A group of college students apparently resisted. Eleven of them were killed. Lübeck is in the Schleswig-Holstein region of Germany, near the border with Denmark. It's a farming area. Secluded. The Wolf

has made no contact about the bombings. Nor were we warned ahead of time. All

we know is, it's escalating."

"The damage in Lübeck was not

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 22

What next? And how soon would it happen?

The tension during the next waiting period was excruciating. A madman was out there blowing up small towns and wouldn't tell us why, or if the attacks would continue and get worse.

For the time being, I concentrated my

attention on a close study of the psychopathic Weasel—reading and rereading everything in his thick file. More than I wanted to, I could see his face, hear his voice. I wanted to bring him down. I went through notes from the psychiatrist who'd treated Shafer when he'd lived in Washington. Not only had

shrink, she'd been his lover.

The notes were mind-boggling, to say the least, especially given the nature of their relationship and how it had

developed—and also how wrong she'd

Dr. Elizabeth Cassady been Shafer's

been about Shafer. As I read, I made notes on Dr. Cassady's notes.

FIRST ENCOUNTER

XX-year-old-male, self-referred with stated chief complaint—"I'm having trouble at work focusing on my

trouble at work focusing on my projects." Stated that what he does is "classified." Also described people at work telling him that he has been behaving "strangely." Client said that he is married, father of three: twin girls and a boy; stated that he is "happy" at home

Well-dressed, very attractive, articulate male, somewhat restless, and with considerable presence. Somewhat grandiose in describing his past accomplishments. RULE OUT Schizoaffective disorder Delusional disorder Substance-induced mood disorder (primarily alcohol or recreational drugs) Attention deficit hyperactivity disorder Borderline personality disorder Unipolar depression **INTERVIEW #3** 10 minutes late for appointment

and with his wife.

IMPRESSION

this. Stated that he felt "spectacular," and yet seemed ill at ease and anxious in session.

today. Irritable when questioned about

INTERVIEW #6
When questioned about home life

and earlier discussion of problems with sexual functioning, became somewhat inappropriate: chuckling, pacing, making sexually explicit jokes, and asking about my personal life. Stated that when he and his wife are together, he engages in fantasies about me and that this causes

INTERVIEW #9

him to ejaculate prematurely.

Quiet today, almost with flattened affect, but denied any depression. Felt that people around him "don't understand

problems with wife. Stated that he had an episode of impotence last week with her, despite fantasizing about me. The sexual fantasies were very detailed and he refused to curtail them when asked. Admitted to being "obsessed" with me. **INTERVIEW #11** Marked change in affect today. Very energetic, euphoric, and almost

me." Continued to describe sexual

overwhelmingly charismatic (possibility of sociopathic disorder). Questioned the need for further sessions, and stated, "I feel terrific." When questioned about issues with his wife, stated: "Things couldn't be better. She adores me, you know."

Discussed an episode of risky

driving his car very fast, and intentionally leading police on a highspeed chase. Alluded to participating in sexual behavior with another partner, possibly a prostitute, and spoke of "rough sex." Manner of relating today was flirtatious, almost openly seductive. He is convinced that I "want" him. **INTERVIEW #14** Missed last appointment: no call. Apologetic today, but later became angry and restless. Stated that he felt the need to "reward himself." Discussed increase in libido again, mentioned calling several high-priced escort services to engage in sexual activity, and discussed desire to engage

behavior this past week involving

Said that he is probably "in love" with me. No affect when he revealed this

sadomasochistic behavior.

to me. None whatsoever. I must say, I am a little speechless. Colonel Shafer seems to be attending these sessions almost solely for the purpose of seducing me.

solely for the purpose of seducing me. And unfortunately, it's working.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 23

After reading Dr. Cassady's notes, I have to admit, I was a little speechless, too. More than a little, actually. The strange case notes began to side with Shafer after the sixteenth visit; they no longer contained any of his personal feelings that must have led to the affair.

Then Dr. Cassady stopped making notes on the sessions altogether. How incredibly odd, not to mention unprofessional. I assumed that their affair had begun by then. If I needed any more proof of what a clever and highly disturbed psychopath Shafer was, I had it in Dr. Cassady's notes.

Late that night I got a call to head

The countdown had to start.

When the call came through, he began in a low-key manner. "Thank you for getting together again on my behalf. I'll try not to disappoint you, or waste anyone's valuable time. Directors Burns,

Bowen, Weir, do you have anything

"You told us to listen," said Burns.

you'd like to say before I begin?"

down to the crisis room again. I was told that the Wolf would be calling momentarily. This had to be something.

"We're listening."

There was a burst of laughter from the Wolf. "I like you, Burns. I suspect you'll be a worthy adversary. By the way, is a Mr. Mahoney there in the room?"

Team and a friend of mine glanced at Ron Burns, who nodded to him to speak. Ned Mahoney sat hunched forward

in his chair, and he was giving the Wolf

The head of the Hostage Rescue

the finger. "Yes, I'm right here. I'm listening." He still had his middle finger extended. "What can I do for you?"

"You can leave now, Mr. Mahoney. I'm afraid that you won't be needed. You're too unstable for my tastes. Too

dangerous. And, yes, I'm quite serious."

Burns motioned for Mahoney to go.

"There will be no need for the FBI's Hostage Rescue Team," said the Wolf. "If it comes to that, all is lost, I assure you. I hope you're beginning to understand how my mind works. I don't want HRT mobilized, and I don't want any further investigation. Call off the dogs.

"Are you all listening? No one is to

try to find out who I am—or who we are. Do you really understand? Please respond if you do."

Everyone in the room called out,

seemed that the Wolf was trying to make us feel like children, or maybe he just enjoyed humiliating the FBI, CIA, and Homeland Security.

"Anyone who didn't respond just

"Yes." They understood. Once again, it

then, please leave the room," said the Wolf. "No, no, sit back down. I'm just having fun at your expense. I'm what you might call a 'creative type.' But I am

there being no formal investigation. I'm deadly serious about it, in fact. "Now, then, let's get down to today's business, shall we? This is an interesting

serious about Mr. Mahoney, and about

juncture, actually. I hope someone is taking notes." There was a pause of approximately

fifteen seconds. Then the Wolf resumed. "I want you to know the targeted cities.

It's time for that.

"There are four—and I would advise that these cities prepare for a worstpossible-case scenario. The cities

should prepare for total destruction."

Another pause, then:

"The targeted cities are . . . New York . . . London . . . Washington . . .

not a word of this goes public. Or I attack immediately."

Then he was gone again. And he still hadn't given us any deadline.

Frankfurt. These cities should prepare for the worst disasters in history. And

hadn't given us any deadline.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 24

The President of the United States was up at 5:30 that morning. Unfortunately, he had already been in meetings for almost two hours. He was on his fourth cup of black coffee.

The National Security Council had been in his office since a little past 3:30. Those present included the heads of the FBI and CIA, plus several intelligence experts. Everyone was taking the Wolf seriously.

The president felt he was sufficiently briefed for his next challenging meeting, but he could never tell about these things, not for sure, especially when politics came into play in a real

emergency situation.

"Let's get this unfortunate circus started Let's do it." He finally turned to

started. Let's do it." He finally turned to his chief of staff.

A couple of minutes later he was talking with the German chancellor and the British prime minister. They were all on-screen, all slightly out of sync in the strange land of videoconferencing.

The president found it a little hard to fathom, but none of the countries' intelligence services had anything concrete on who the Wolf was or where he might be living. He said as much to the others.

"Finally, we agree on something," the German chancellor said.

"Everyone is aware that he exists,

former KGB. We think he's in his late forties. But all we know is that he's very clever. It's maddening."

but no one has a clue where he is," the prime minister agreed. "We think he's

They all agreed on that single fact, and finally they agreed on one other thing.

There could be no negotiations with the terrorist.

Somehow, the Wolf had to be hunted

down—and terminated with extreme prejudice.

Part Two

Part Two
MISDIRECTIONS

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 25

All large cities were becoming the same boring and antiseptic place to the Wolf now, as capitalism and multinational businesses spread everywhere and major crime followed and spread as well. The Wolf spent part of the night walking in one of the world's most important cities; it doesn't matter which one, since the Russian was equally uncomfortable in nearly all of them

But tonight, he happened to be in Washington, D.C. Plotting the next steps.

No one understood the Wolf, not a single person in the world. Of course, no one was ever understood by anyone else, But no one could possibly comprehend the Wolf's extraordinary level of paranoia, something burned into his

heart long ago—in Paris, of all places. Something almost physical, a poison in the system. His Achilles' heel, he

was he? Any rational person knew that.

suspected. And this paranoia, the certainty of an untimely death, led to a passion—not exactly a love of life, but a need to play fiercely at it, to win at all costs, or at least never to lose.

So the Wolf walked the streets of downtown Washington, and he planned even more murders.

Alone Always alone Frequently

Alone. Always alone. Frequently squeezing his black rubber handball. A good-luck charm? Hardly. But

ironically, a key to everything about him. The little black ball.

Time to think, to plan, to execute, he

reminded himself. He was sure that the governments wouldn't listen to his demands; they couldn't give in. Not yet, not so easily.

Possibly more than one lesson.

And so a late-night drive out to FBI

Director Purpels home in the Weshington

They needed another lesson.

Director Burns's home in the Washington suburbs.

What a desirable life the man

seemed to live with his family. The Wolf genuinely felt that way.

An attractive, well-kept ranch house —modest enough, consistent with an American Dream of a sort. A blue

rack with three two-wheelers. Basketball hoop with a glass backboard and a bright white square above the rim. Should this family die? A simple

Mercury sedan in the driveway. Bike

enough task to execute. Pleasurable in a way. Richly deserved.

But was it the most effective lesson?

The Wolf wasn't sure. So the answer

was probably no.

Besides, there was another target to consider.

A grudge to settle.

What could be better than that?

Revenge, a dish best served cold, thought the Wolf, squeezing his rubber ball again and again.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 26

Welcome to the process-obsessed federal government and its completely bizarre way of doing things. That was my mantra lately, something I told myself nearly every time I entered the Hoover Building. And never truer than during these past few days.

What happened next followed the prescribed protocol under a couple of recent presidential decision directives that affected the Bureau. The response to the Wolf would fall into two distinct categories: "investigation" and "consequence management." The FBI would oversee the investigation; the

Federal Emergency Management Agency

(FEMA) would be in charge of consequence management.

Very neat and orderly, and

unworkable. In my opinion, anyway.

Because the threat was to a major
U.S. metropolitan area—two, actually,

New York City and Washington—the Domestic Emergency Support Team was deployed, and we met with them on the fifth floor of the Hoover Building. I was starting to feel that I worked out of the crisis center; still, it was anything but

The morning's first subject was threat assessment. On account of the three bombed towns, we were taking the "terrorists" seriously, of course. The discussion was led by the new deputy

dull.

retirement in California because he was so good at what he did. Some of the talk was about false alarms, since there had been many of them in the past couple of years. It was agreed that this wasn't a false alarm. Bob McIllvaine was certain of it, which was enough for most of us.

The second topic was consequence

director of the Bureau, a man named Robert Campbell McIllvaine Jr. The director had recently talked him out of

management, so FEMA ran the session. The ability of health-care providers to deal with a big blast in Washington, New York, or both cities simultaneously was called into question. The dangers of sudden evacuation were now a major issue because the sheer panic to get out

of either city, but especially New York, could kill thousands.

The theoretical but very frank talk

that morning was the scariest I'd ever been a part of, and it got only worse. After a thirty-minute lunch—for those

with an appetite—and a break for phone calls, we launched into suspect assessment.

Who is responsible? Is it the Wolf?

The Russian mob? Could it be some other group? And what do they want?

The initial list of alternatives was

The initial list of alternatives was long, but it was quickly whittled down to al Qaeda, Hezbollah, the Egyptian Islamic Jihad, or possibly a freelance group operating for profit and maybe working with one of the organized

Finally, the talk turned to "action steps" to be spearheaded by the Bureau.

Mobile and fixed, or static, surveillance

terrorist units.

was being set up on several suspects around the United States, but also in Europe and the Middle East. We had begun a huge investigation already, one of the largest in history.

All of it against the explicit and threatening orders given by the Wolf.

Late that evening I was still going over some of the most recent data that had been collected on Geoffrey Shafer

here and in Europe. Europe? I wondered. Is that where this plot is coming from? Maybe England, where Shafer lived for so many years? Maybe

I read a few reports about Shafer's years working as a procurer of mercenaries in Africa.

even Russia? Or one of the Russian

settlements inside the United States?

Then something hit me.

When he had traveled back to

he'd gone into the country in a wheelchair. He'd apparently traveled around London using the wheelchair disguise. It was also doubtful he knew that we knew.

England recently, he'd used a disguise:

It was a clue, and I put it into the system immediately. I flagged it as something important.

Maybe the Weasel was using a wheelchair in Washington.

step ahead of him, instead of two steps behind.

On that note, I finally called it a

And maybe we were suddenly one

night. At least, I hoped the day was finally over.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 27

Very early the following morning, the Weasel made his way through crowded and noisy Union Station in a black, collapsible wheelchair, and he was thinking mostly happy thoughts. He liked to win, and he was winning at every twist and turn.

Geoffrey Shafer had very good military contacts in Washington, D.C., which made him extremely valuable to the operation. He had contacts in London, too, one of the other target cities, but that wasn't as important to the Wolf. Still, he was a player again and he liked the feeling of being somebody.

Besides, he wanted to hurt a lot of

Americans. The Wolf had given him an opportunity to do some real damage here. Zamochit. The breaking of bones. Mass murder.

Lately Shafer had been wearing his hair cut short, and he'd also dyed it black. He couldn't exactly disguise the fact that he was six foot two, but he had done something better—actually, he'd

people in America. He despised

gotten this idea from an old associate. During daylight at least, he traveled around Washington in the wheelchair, a state-of-the-art model he could easily throw in the back of the Saab station wagon he was driving. If he was noticed occasionally—and he was—it was for all the wrong reasons.

with a contact inside Union Station. They both got on queue—the contact standing behind Shafer—at a Starbucks.

At 6:20 that morning, Shafer met

They struck up what appeared to be a casual conversation.

"They're on the move," said the

"They're on the move," said the contact, who worked as an assistant to a higher-up in the FBI. "Nobody listened to the warnings not to investigate.

the targeted cities. They're looking for you here, of course. Agent Cross is assigned to you."

"I wouldn't have it any other way,"

Shafer said, and smiled greekedly, as he

They've already moved surveillance into

"I wouldn't have it any other way," Shafer said, and smiled crookedly, as he always did. He wasn't surprised about the surveillance. The Wolf had predicted

and the wheelchair rolled to a row of pay phones near the railway station's ticket booths. He sipped his hot drink as he placed a local call.

"I have some scut work for you. Pays

it. So had he. He stayed in line and bought a latte. Then he pressed a button

very well," he said to the woman who answered. "Fifty thousand dollars for just an hour or so of your time."

"Well, then, I'm your scut," said the woman, who happened to be one of the

world's very best snipers.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 28

The meeting with the "subcontractor" took place just before noon in the food court at the Tysons Corner mall. Colonel Shafer met Captain Nicole Williams at a small table directly across from a Burger King.

They had burgers and sodas laid out in front of them, but neither ate what Shafer referred to as "godawful Yankee artery cloggers."

"Nice wheels," Captain Williams said with a smirk when she saw him arrive in the wheelchair. "You have no shame, do you?"

"Whatever works, Nikki." He returned her smile. "You know me well

I get it done."

"Yeah, I know you, Colonel.

Anyway, thanks for thinking of me for

enough by now. Whatever the job takes,

Anyway, thanks for thinking of me for this."

"Wait until you hear about the job

before you thank me," he said.
"That's why I'm here. To listen."

Actually, Shafer was already a little concerned; he was surprised that Nikki Williams had let herself go so much

since the last time they'd worked together. He doubted that she was five foot six, but she must have weighed close to two hundred pounds now.

Still, Nikki Williams exuded the confidence of the highly skilled professional Shafer knew she had six months in Angola, and Captain Williams was very good at her specialty. She'd always delivered what was asked of her before.

He told Nikki Williams only her part

always been. They'd worked together for

of the job and repeated the fee, which was fifty thousand dollars for less than an hour's work. The thing he liked best about Nikki was that she never complained about the difficulty of any job, or even its risks.

"What's the next step for me? When do we go?" were her only two questions after he had detailed the basics, though not the actual target.

"Tomorrow at one you'll to be at Manassas Regional Airport in Virginia.

An MD-530 helicopter will set down there at five past the hour. We'll have an HK PSG-1 on board for you."

Williams frowned and shook her

head. "Unh-uh. If you don't mind, I'll bring my own. I prefer the Winchester M70, with 300 Win Magnum hollow-

point boattails. I've field-tested them, know they're best for this kind of job. You said that glass has to be penetrated, right?"

"Yes, that's right, Captain. You have to shoot into an office building."

Shafer didn't object to the change in

weapons. He had worked with plenty of snipers and knew they were always idiosyncratic, had their own peculiar way of doing things. He'd expected

surprised there weren't more, actually. "So who's going to die tomorrow?" Nikki Williams finally asked. "I need to know that, of course."

modifications from her and was

Shafer told Captain Williams the target, and to her credit, she never raised an eyebrow. Her only reaction was "My price just went up. It just doubled."

Shafer nodded slowly. "Agreed. That will be just fine, Captain." Then Nikki Williams smiled. "Did I

settle too low?"

Shafer nodded again. "Yes, you did. But I'm going to give you one-fifty anyway. Just don't miss him."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 29

We might have gotten a decent break in the case—finally, something, and it had started with a tip from me. The wheelchair! We had a lead.

At ten in the morning, I raced across Washington to the Farragut apartment building on Cathedral Avenue. Three years before, a partner of mine named Patsy Hampton had been murdered in the underground garage of the Farragut. Geoffrey Shafer had killed her. The Farragut was where his old therapist lived.

We'd had Dr. Elizabeth Cassady under surveillance for the past thirty-six hours, and it seemed to have paid off.

the underground garage near where Patsy had been brutally killed. Then he went upstairs to the penthouse apartment, 10D, where Dr. Cassady still lived. He'd come in a wheelchair. I boarded an elevator with four other agents. We had our guns drawn and ready. "He's extremely dangerous. Please take what I'm saying seriously," I reminded them as we stepped from the

The Weasel had shown up. He parked in

elevator on the therapist's floor.

It had been painted since the last time I was there. So much of this was familiar, hauntingly so. I was getting angry all over again about Patsy

Hampton's death, about the Weasel. I pressed the bell at 10D.

Then I called out, "FBI, open the door. FBI, Dr. Cassady."

The door opened, and I was staring

at a tall, attractive blond woman whom I recognized.

Elizabeth Cassady recognized me,

too. "Dr. Cross," she said. "What a surprise. Well, no, it isn't really."

As she spoke I heard a wheelchair rolling up behind her. I raised my gun, pushing Dr. Cassady out of the way.

I aimed my weapon.

"Stop right there! Stop!" I shouted.

The wheelchair, and the man seated in it came into full view I shook my

in it, came into full view. I shook my head and slowly lowered the gun. I held back a curse. I smelled a rat, or should I say a Weasel. "I'm obviously not Colonel Geoffrey Shafer. Nor have I met him. I'm a stage actor named Francis Nicolo, and I am physically impaired, so no rough treatment, please.

The man in the wheelchair spoke.

"I was told to come here and I am being paid handsomely to do so. I was instructed to tell you that the colonel says hello and that you should have listened to the explicit instructions you were given. Since you are here, you didn't listen."

The man in the wheelchair then bowed from the waist. "That's my part, my piece. It's all I know. How was my performance? Acceptable? You may applaud if you wish."

"You're under arrest," I told him. Then I turned to Elizabeth Cassady. "So are you. Where is he? Where's

Shafer?" She shook her head and looked incredibly sad. "I haven't seen Geoffrey

in years. I'm being used, and so are you. Of course, for me it's harder—I loved

him. I strongly suggest that you get used to it. This is how his mind works, and I should know."

So should I, I was thinking. So should I.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 30

This is impressive, thought Captain Nikki Williams. And not the airfield meeting itself. The whole plan was dazzling. Audacious.

Manassas Regional was a small, nondescript airport spread over eight hundred acres, with two parallel runways. There was a main terminal building and an FAA control tower, but it was a very good spot for the mission.

Somebody is really thinking things through. This is going to work.

A couple of minutes after Captain Williams arrived at the airfield, she saw her helicopter setting down. She had two instant notions: where the hell had these

people gotten an MD-530? And it was just right for the job she'd been given.

This was definitely going to work. It

might not even be that hairy.

Nikki Williams hurried to the

helicopter, carrying the Winchester in a cloth sling bag. The pilot had the other critical puzzle pieces for her. He was apparently the man with the final plan.

"I'm all fueled. We're headed

northeast, over Route 28. I'm gonna set down for half a minute or so in Rock Creek Park," he told her. "Rock Creek Park? I don't follow,"

Captain Williams said. "Why would you put down again once we're airborne?"

"The park stop is just to get you up on the skid. That's your position for the hit. All right with you?"
"Perfect," Williams said. "I get it now."

The scheme was daring, but it made sense to her. Everything about it did. They had even picked an overcast day

with very slight winds. The MD-530 was fast and highly maneuverable. It was also stable enough to shoot from. In her army days, she'd fired thousands of rounds from them in all kinds of weather, and practice made perfect.

"You ready?" the pilot called back once she was on board. "We're going to be in and out of D.C. in less than nine minutes."

Williams gave it a thumbs-up, and the MD-530 corkscrewed up fast, flew

Potomac. It never got higher than thirty or forty feet off the ground and was traveling at about eighty knots.

The helicopter set down for less than forty seconds in Rock Creek Park.

northeast, and was soon crossing the

Captain Williams took a position on the right skid, behind and just below the pilot. Then she signaled for him to lift off. "Let's go. Let's do it."

off. "Let's go. Let's do it."

Not only is this smart, it is cool as hell, she couldn't help thinking as the helicopter took off again and closed on her target. In and out of harm's way in less than nine minutes. He'll never know what hit him.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 31

I was back at my desk before noon, feeling edgy and ragged, tapping into the National Crime Information Center computer database, drinking about a gallon of black coffee—which was the worst thing to do. The goddamn Weasel: he knew we had found out about the wheelchair. But how? They have somebody inside, don't they? Somebody warned Shafer

At about one, I was still at my desk when a shrill, ear-splitting alarm sounded in the building.

At the same time my pager signaled a terrorist alert.

I heard loud voices up and down the

hall. "Look out your window! Go to your window, quick!"

"Oh, good God! What the hell are

they doing down there?" somebody else yelled.

I took a look outside and was

stunned to see two men in fatigues running across the pink granite

cobblestone of the inner courtyard. They were just passing the bronze sculpture "Fidelity, Bravery, Integrity."

My first wild thought was that the men might be human bombs. How else

An agent named Charlie Kilvert from next door peeked his head inside. "You catching this, Alex? You believe it?"

could just two of them hope to damage

"I see it. I don't believe it."

I couldn't take my eyes off the action down in the courtyard, though. Within

seconds, heavily armed agents had appeared on the scene.

At first there were only three, then at

least a dozen. The guards from the sidewalk booth suddenly came tearing up the driveway, too.

All the agents below had their guns

All the agents below had their guns pointed at the two men in fatigues. Both of them had stopped running now. They appeared to be surrendering.

The agents weren't coming any closer, though. Maybe they shared my idea about "human bombs," but more likely they were following procedure.

Italy they were following procedure.

The suspects were holding their

Building. Just about all I could see was the nose and rotor.

The ominous hovering of the copter caused the agents in the courtyard to aim

around the south side of the Hoover

arms high over their head. Then, slowly and deliberately, they lay flat on their

Then I spotted a helicopter drift

stomach. What the hell?

their weapons into the sky. This was a no-fly zone, after all. The agents on the ground were yelling and threatening with their guns.

Then the helicopter banked sharply away from the Hoover Building. It

disappeared from sight.

Seconds later Charlie Kilvert was in the doorway again. "Somebody's been

shot upstairs!" I almost knocked Charlie over getting out the door.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 32

The MD-530 was really moving as it got to Washington; the pilot was using office and apartment buildings for cover now, sliding between them like somebody playing the craziest game of hide-and-seek.

The flying tactics would avoid radar detectors and also confuse the hell out of casual observers, Nikki Williams figured. Besides, this was all happening incredibly fast. No one would be able to react, and an air force jet wouldn't fly in this close to these office buildings, anyway.

She could see the target now. Hot damn! The disturbance on the ground had

their windows at the target building, which she knew was FBI headquarters. This is really something! She loved it! She had seen some major-league action in the army, but not enough of it, and

there were always a thousand rules you

were supposed to follow.

been planned and lots of people were at

Only one rule now, baby: shoot this guy dead and get the hell out of Dodge before anybody can do a goddamn thing about it.

The pilot had the coordinates of the targeted window and, sure enough, two men in dark suits were standing there, looking down on the street action—the diversion built into the plan. Captain Williams knew what her target looked

only a hundred feet away-he'd be dead and she'd be on her way out of there. One of the men behind the window

like, and by the time he saw her rifle—

appeared to shout a warning and tried to push the other one away. Quite the hero. No matter—Williams pulled the

trigger. Easy does it.

Then, escape! The helicopter pilot used the same flying technique for exfil and headed directly to the drop zone in Virginia. It

took just three and a half minutes from the FBI building all the way out to the drop area. Nikki Williams was still buzzing from the shot and kill, not to mention the big fee she'd be getting.

Double-fee money, and God knows, she

was worth every penny.

The helicopter set down easily, and

she jumped down off the skid. She flipped a salute to the pilot, and he reached out his right arm toward her—and shot her twice, once in the throat,

once in the forehead. The pilot didn't like it, but he did it. Those were his orders, and he knew enough to obey

them. The female sniper had apparently told someone else about her mission. The pilot knew nothing more than that.

Just his piece of the big picture.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 33

This much we knew.

The two men captured down in the courtyard had been hustled inside the FBI building and were now being held on the second floor. But who the hell were they?

The serious rumor circulating was that Ron Burns had been shot, that my boss and friend was dead.

Sources had it that a successful sniper attack had been made and that Burns's office was the target. I couldn't help thinking of the assassination of Stacy Pollack earlier that year. The Wolf had never actually taken responsibility for the murder of the head of the SIOC,

ordered it. Burns vowed revenge, though none had been taken. Not to my knowledge, anyway. About half an hour after the sniper attack, I got a call to go down to the

but we knew he was the one who

second floor. That was good: I needed to do something, or go crazy in my office.

"Anything on the shooting upstairs?"

I asked the ACAS who called me.
"Nothing I know of. We've heard the rumors, too. No one will deny or

rumors, too. No one will deny or confirm anything. I spoke to Tony Woods in the director's office, and he won't say anything. Nobody's talking,

Alex. Sorry, man."

"Something happened, though?

Somebody got shot?"

"Yeah. Somebody got shot up there." Feeling sick about everything that had happened in the past few days, I

hurried down to the second floor and

was led by a guard to a row of holding cells I hadn't known even existed. The agent who met me explained that he wanted me to conduct the interview without a briefing, to get my take on the prisoners.

I walked into one of the small

interview rooms and found two scared-looking black men dressed in cammies. Terrorists? Doubtful. They looked to be in their mid-thirties, maybe early forties, but it was hard to tell. They needed haircuts and shaves, their clothes were soiled and wrinkled, and the room

worse.

"We already tol' our story," one of the men complained bitterly, screwing

already stank with perspiration and

up his wrinkled face, as I entered the room. "How many times we got to tell y'all?"

I sat down across from the two of

I sat down across from the two of them. "This is a homicide investigation," I said. I didn't know whether they'd been told that, but it was where I wanted to start. "Somebody is dead upstairs."

The man who hadn't spoken yet covered his face with his hands and started to moan and sway from side to side. "Oh no, oh no, oh, God no," he groaned.

"Take your hands away from your

face and listen to me!" I yelled at him.

Both men looked at me and shut up.

Now they were listening, at least.

"I want to hear your story. Everything you know, every single

detail. And I don't care that you told it before. You hear me? You understand? I don't care how many times you think you told it. "Right now, you two are murder

suspects. So I want to hear your side of things. Talk to me. I am your lifeline, your only lifeline. Now talk."

They did. Both of them. They rambled, incoherently at times, but they talked. A little more than two hours later I left the interview room feeling that I'd heard the whole truth, at least their

Ron Frazier and Leonard Pickett were drifters who lived near Union Station. Both were army veterans.

sketchy version of it.

They'd been hired off the street to run around the FBI building like the crazies that they probably were in real life. The camouflage outfits were theirs, the same clothes they said they wore every day in the park and panhandling on the streets of D.C.

Next I went into another interview room to brief two very senior agents from upstairs. They looked about as tense as I felt. I wondered what they knew about Ron Burns.

"I don't think those two know much of anything," I told them. "They may "Your turn. Tell me what happened upstairs. Who was shot? Is it Ron Burns?"

One of the two agents, Millard, took a deep breath, then spoke. "This doesn't leave the room, Alex. Not until we say

I nodded solemnly. "Is the director

"Thomas Weir is dead. Weir is the

one who was shot," said Agent Millard.

I looked across at the senior agents.

dollars to do what they did."

so. Understood?"

dead?"

have been approached by Geoffrey Shafer. Whoever hired them had an English accent. The physical description fits Shafer. Whoever it was paid them all of two hundred bucks. Two hundred

Suddenly I felt weak-kneed and woozy. Somebody had killed the director of the CIA.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 34

Chaos.

Once word got out about the murder of Thomas Weir, it was on every TV channel and the press corps began to circle the Hoover Building. Of course, nobody could tell them what we thought had really happened, and every reporter knew in his gut that we were holding back information.

Later that afternoon we'd learned that the body of a woman had been found in the woods of northern Virginia. We believed that she might have been the sniper who killed Tom Weir. A Winchester rifle was found with the body, and it was almost definitely the murder weapon. At five o'clock the Wolf made contact again.

The phone in the crisis room rang.

Ron Burns himself picked up. I had never seen the director look

graver, and more vulnerable. Thomas Weir had been a friend of his; the Weir and Burns families went on vacation to Nantucket together in the summertime.

The Wolf began, "You're an extraordinarily lucky man, Director. Those bullets were meant for you. I don't make many mistakes, but I also know they're inevitable in a military operation this complex. I accept that mistakes happen in any war. It's simply a fact of life."

Burns said nothing. His face was expressionless, a pale mask, impossible to read, even by any of us.

The Wolf continued, "I understand

how you're feeling, how all of you are feeling. Mr. Weir was a family man, yes? Basically a decent human being? So now you're angry at me. You want to put me down like a mad dog. But think about it from my perspective. You were told the rules, and you still chose to go your own way.

"As you can see now, your way led to disaster and death. It always will lead to disaster and death. It's inevitable. And the stakes are much higher than just a single life. So let's move on. The clock is ticking.

people today who will listen. Everyone is so self-absorbed these days. Take Captain Williams, for example, our assassin. She was instructed not to tell anyone about the job she was hired to do. But she told her husband. Now she's dead. I understand that you found the body. News flash: the husband is dead,

"You know, it's difficult to find

Do you need an address? I can help with that."

Burns spoke. "We already found her husband's body. What's the point of your call? What do you want from us?"

too. You might want to retrieve the body at their home. It's in Denton, Maryland.

call? What do you want from us?"

"I would think it would be obvious,
Mr. Director. I want you to know that I

mean exactly what I say. I expect compliance, and I will get it. One way or the other, I will get my way. I always do.

"So, that having been said, let me

give you the gory details—the numbers. Our price to go away. I hope someone has a pencil and paper."

"Go ahead," said Burns.

"All right, here we go, then.

"New York, six hundred fifty million U.S. dollars. London, six hundred

million. Dollars. Washington, four hundred fifty million. Frankfurt, four hundred fifty million. A grand total of two billion one hundred and fifty million in U.S. dollars. Plus, there are fifty-seven political prisoners I want

worth, all the prisoners are from the Middle East. You figure it out. Interesting puzzle, don't you think?

"You have four days to deliver the money and the prisoners. That's plenty of time, no? More than fair? You'll be told how and where. You have four days

released. You will be provided with the names in the next hour. For what it's

"And, yes, I'm perfectly serious. I also realize that I'm asking for a great deal of money and that it will be deemed 'impossible' to raise. I expect to hear as much. But don't bother with the excuses or the whining."

from . . . right . . . now.

There was a short pause. "That's the fucking point of the call,

and I suppose there is one other thing. I don't forgive and forget. You are going to die before this is over, Director Burns. So keep looking over your shoulder. One of these days, I'll be there.

And boom! But for right now, four

Mr. Burns. Deliver the money. Deliver the prisoners. Don't mess up again. Oh,

days!"
Then the Wolf hung up.

Ron Burns stared straight ahead and spoke through clenched teeth, "You've got that right, boom! One of these days, I'll be there for you."

Then Burns's eyes slowly went around the room, and stopped at me.

"We're on the clock, Alex."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 35

Burns continued: "I'd like Dr. Cross to give us his impressions of the Russian maniac. He knows all about him. For those of you who don't know Alex Cross, he came to us from the Washington PD. Their loss, believe me. He's the man who put Kyle Craig away." "And who let Geoffrey Shafer escape once or twice," I spoke up from my seat. "My impressions so far? Well, I won't belabor the obvious too much. There's his need for complete control and power. I can tell you this: he wants to do things on a large scale, work a big stage. He's a creative, obsessive

planner. He's an 'executive type,'

meaning that he organizes, delegates well, doesn't have problems making difficult decisions.

"But most of all, he's vicious. He likes to hurt people. He likes to watch

people get hurt. He's giving us plenty of time to think about what could happen. That's partly because he knows we won't, can't, pay him easily. But also

because he's preying on our minds. He knows how hard it will be to catch him. Bin Laden is still free, isn't he?

"I'll tell you what doesn't track for me—the assassination attempt on the director. I don't see how it fits his

me—the assassination attempt on the director. I don't see how it fits his pattern. Not this early in the game, anyway. And I especially don't like it that he missed, that he failed."

looked at Burns, but he waved me off. "Do you think he missed? Or was Tom Weir the real target?" he asked.

"My guess . . . Weir was the target. I

The words came out wrong and I

don't think the Wolf made a mistake. Not one this big. I do think he lied about what happened."

"Any idea why? Anybody?" Burns

"Any idea why? Anybody?" Burns glanced around the room.

No one spoke up, so I continued. "If Thomas Weir was the target, it's the best clue we have. Why would he be a significant threat to the Wolf? What could he have known? I wouldn't be surprised if Weir and the Wolf knew each other from somewhere, even if

Weir wasn't aware of it. Weir is

Weir have come across the Russian? That's a question we need to ask."

"And then answer in a hurry," said Burns. "Let's get on it. Everybody—and

I mean everybody—in the Bureau!"

important. But where would Thomas

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 36

The man who had made the most recent phone calls for the Wolf had his instructions and he knew enough to follow them precisely. He was to be seen in Washington. That was his piece.

The Wolf was to be seen, which would definitely cause a stir. Wouldn't it?

The phone calls he'd made to FBI headquarters and elsewhere would soon be traced to the Four Seasons Hotel on Pennsylvania Avenue. It was part of the current plan, and the plan had been nearly flawless thus far.

So he calmly walked down to the hotel lobby and made certain he was

in the windows and the latest fashions of Georgetown.

He found it somewhat comical that he could actually see police cruisers and the FBI as they sped toward the Four Seasons from several directions.

Finally the man stepped into a white Chevy van that was waiting for him at the corner of M and Thomas Jefferson.

The van sped away in the direction

of the airport. In addition to the driver,

M Street, checking out restaurant menus

Then he took a leisurely stroll along

noticed at the concierge desk and also by the couple of doormen out front. It helped that he was tall, blond, bearded, and wore a long cashmere coat. All according to the plan he'd been given. there was a second man. He sat in back beside the one who'd made the phone calls from the Four Seasons. "It went well?" the driver asked

once they were a few miles from M Street and the commotion going on there. The bearded man shrugged. "Of

course it did. They have an accurate description. Something to go on, a little hope, whatever they want to call it. It went perfectly. I did what was asked of me."

"Excellent," said the second man. He then pulled out a Beretta and shot the blond man in the right temple. He was brain-dead before he even heard the explosion.

Now the police and FBI had a

physical description of the Wolf—but no one alive matched it.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 37

There was more intrigue, or at least confusion, that afternoon. According to our telecommunications people, the Wolf had called us from the Four Seasons Hotel in D.C., and he had been spotted there. The description we had of him was already being sent around the world. It was possible that he'd slipped up, but I didn't know if I could believe it. He'd always called on cell phones before, but this time he used a hotel phone. Why?

I got a surprise when I arrived home a little before 9:30 that night. Dr. Kayla Coles was in the living room with Nana. The two of them were huddled together

knew what. I was a little concerned that Nana's doctor was there so late in the evening. "Everything okay?" I asked. "What's

on the sofa, conspiring about God only

going on?"

"Kayla was in the neighborhood. She just stopped by," Nana answered. "Isn't

that right, Dr. Coles? No problems that I know of. Except you missed supper."

"Well, actually," Kayla spoke up,

"Nana was feeling a little faint again. So I stopped by as a precaution."

"Now, Kayla, don't exaggerate, please. Let's not get carried away," Nana scolded in her usual way. "I'm just fine. Fainting's just a part of my life now."

Kayla nodded and smiled pleasantly. Then she sighed out loud and leaned back on the couch. "I'm sorry. You tell it, Nana."

"I felt a little faint a few days last

week. As you know, Alex. No big thing. If we still had Alex Junior around to take care of, then maybe I would be more concerned."

"Well, I'm concerned," I said. Kayla smiled and shook her head.

"Right. Like Nana said, I was in the neighborhood and I just stopped by, Alex. Strictly social. I did take her blood pressure. Everything seems to be in working order. I would like her to go for a few blood tests."

"Fine, I'll go for tests," said Nana.

"Let's talk about the weather now."

I shook my head. At both of them. "
You still working too hard?" I asked

Kayla.

smiled brightly. Kayla had tremendous spirit and could always light up a room. "Unfortunately, there's too much work to do around here. Don't get me started

about the number of people in the capital of this wealthy nation of ours who can't begin to afford to see a good doctor, or

"Look who's talking," she said, then

wait for hours and hours at St. Anthony's and several other hospitals I could name around this town."

I had always liked Kayla, and maybe, to be honest, I was even a little

intimidated by her. Why is that? I

she'd lost some weight, what with all her running around and do-gooding in the neighborhood and elsewhere. The truth was, she looked better than ever. I almost felt embarrassed to have noticed.

wondered as we talked. I noticed that

gawking at?" Nana asked. "Sit down and ioin us." "I have to go," Kayla said, and stood

"What are you standing there

up from the couch. "It is late, even for me." "Don't let me break up the party," I

protested. Suddenly I didn't want Kayla to leave. I wanted to talk about something other than the Wolf and the terror attacks that had been threatened.

"You're not breaking up the party,

Alex. Wouldn't happen. But I still have two more house calls to make." I looked at my watch. "Two more

calls at this hour? You're something else. Wow. You're crazy, you know that?" I grinned.

"Maybe I am," Kayla said, and shrugged. "Probably true." Then she kissed Nana with obvious affection. "You take care. Blood tests. Don't

forget." "My memory is fine."

When she was gone, Nana said to me, "Kayla Coles is something else, Alex. And you know what? I think that

one reason she comes around here is to see you. That's my cockeyed theory, anyway, and I'm sticking with it."

The thought had occurred to me, too. "Then why does she leave so fast when I get here?"

Nana frowned and raised an

eyebrow at me. "Maybe it's because you never ask her to stay. Maybe it's because you gawk at her when she's here. Why is that? You know, she just could be the one for you. Don't argue with me. She scares you, and that might be a good thing."

I thought about it, and I didn't have a response. It had been a long day and my brain wasn't firing on all cylinders. "So you're okay?" I asked Nana. "You're sure you're feeling all right?"

"Alex, I'm eighty-three years old. More or less. How okay can I be?" she asked. Then Nana kissed me on the cheek and headed off to bed. "You're not getting any younger

yourself," she turned and chirped over her shoulder Good one, Nana.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 38

Not everyone was headed off to bed yet that night. The night was still young in some quarters.

The Weasel had never been any good at controlling his so-called baser desires and physical needs. This fact scared him sometimes, because it was an obvious weakness and vulnerability, but it also turned him on. The danger, the adrenaline rush. Actually, it made him feel more alive than anything else in his life. When he went for the kill, he felt so good, so powerful, that it took over everything and he lost himself completely in the moment.

Shafer knew Washington, D.C., very

sections, because it was where he had hunted most often in the past.

The Weasel was hunting tonight. And he was feeling alive again, that his life had a purpose.

well from his earlier posting at the British embassy, and he knew the poorer

He drove a black Mercury Cougar along South Capitol. A cool drizzle was falling, and there were only a couple of skanks walking the streets. But one of the girls had already caught his eye.

He cruised around the block a couple of times, checking her out in the most obvious ways, playing at being a john.

He finally slowed the Cougar beside a petite black girl showing off her wares

a silver bustier, matching short skirt, and platform heels.

The very best part: he had been instructed to go hunting in Washington

near the hot Nation nightclub. She wore

tonight. He was following orders from the Wolf. Just doing his job.

The young black girl thrust her chest forward provocatively as he leaned

across the front seat to talk to her. She probably thought that her pert young nipples put her in control of the situation. This encounter will be interesting, he was thinking. Shafer had on a wig, and he had colored his face and hands black. A dumb old rock tune was playing inside his head: "The name of the song is I like it like that."

"Those real?" he asked as the girl leaned in close.

"Last time I checked they were.

Maybe you should find out for yourself?

You interested in a feel? It could be arranged, you know. A private tour, just for you, darlin'."

Shafer smiled pleasantly, playing the game, too, the street hustle. If the girl noticed he was wearing blackface, she wasn't letting on. Nothing bothers this

one, does it? Well, we'll see about that.
"Hop in," he said. "I'd like to check
you out. Breast to toe, as it were."

"It's a hundred," she said, and suddenly stood back from the car. "Y'okay with that? 'Cause if you're not

real, a hundred is fine. It won't be a problem." The girl opened the door and hopped into the car. She was wearing way too

Shafer continued to smile. "If they're

much perfume. "See for yourself, sweetheart. They're kind of small-like,

but they're soooo nice. And they're all yours."

Shafer laughed again. "You know, I like you a great deal. Remember what

you said, though. I'll hold you to it." They're all mine.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 39

I was on duty again at midnight, and I felt as though I was back in Homicide. I arrived in a familiar neighborhood that was mostly white clapboard row houses, many of them deserted, on New Jersey Avenue in Southeast. A crowd had already gathered at the murder scene, including some local gangbangers and little kids on bikes still up at that late hour.

A man in a Rastafarian hat full of dreadlocks was shouting at the police from behind the yellow crime-scene tape. "Hey, ya hear dat music?" he called in a loopy, wheezy voice. "Ya like dat music? Dat mah people music."

Sampson met me outside one of the dilapidated row houses, and we went in together.

"Just like bad old times," John said,

shaking his head. "That why you're here, Dragonslayer? Are you nostalgic for the old days? Want to come back to the Washington PD?"

I nodded and gestured around. "Yeah. I missed this. Bad homicide scenes in the middle of the night."

"Bet you do, too. I would."

The building where the body had been found was boarded up in front, but it was easy enough for us to get inside. There was no front door.

"This is Alex Cross," Sampson said to the patrolmen standing just outside the

open doorway. "You heard of him? This is the Alex Cross, brother."
"Dr. Cross," said the man as he

stepped aside to let us enter.
"Gone," said John Sampson, "but not

Gone, said John Sampson, but not forgotten."

Once we were in, the scene was

sadly familiar and reprehensible. Garbage was strewn in the hallways, and the smell of decaying food and urine was overpowering. Maybe it was because I hadn't been inside one of these vacated rattraps in a while, over a year now.

We were told that the body was on the top floor, the third, so Sampson and I began to climb.

"Dumping grounds," he muttered.

"Yeah, I know. I remember the drill pretty well."

"At least we don't have to visit the goddamn basement," Sampson grumped. "So, why did you say you're here? I

didn't catch that part."

"I just missed hanging with you.

Nobody calls me Sugar anymore."

"Uh-huh. You Feebies aren't into

nicknames? So why are you here, Sugar?"

Sugar?"
Sampson and I had made our way to the third floor. There were Washington

PD uniforms everywhere up there. This really was déjà vu all over again. I put on plastic gloves, and so did Sampson. I did miss working with him, and sadly, this brought it all home, the good and the

on the right just as a young black patrolman was leaving. He had his hand over his mouth, a white handkerchief

We stopped outside the second door

bad.

wrapped over the fist. I think he was going to be sick any second. That part doesn't change, either.

"Hope he didn't barf all over our crime scene." Sampson said. "Goddamn

crime scene," Sampson said. "Goddamn rookies."

Then we went inside "Oh man." I

Then we went inside. "Oh man," I muttered. You see things like this over and over in Homicide, but you never get used to it, and you don't forget the details, the sensations, the smells, the taste it leaves in your mouth.

"He called it in to us first," I told

"Who's he?" he asked.
"You tell me," I said.

Sampson. "That's why I'm here."

that lay on the bare wooden floor. Young woman, probably still in her teens.

We walked over closer to the body

Petite, pretty enough. Naked except for one platform hanging off the toes on her left foot. Golden ankle charm on her right foot. Her hands were tied behind her back with what looked like plastic cable. A black plastic bag had been stuffed inside her mouth.

I'd seen this kind of murder before, exactly this kind. So had Sampson.

"Prostitute." Sampson sighed. "Patrolmen seen her around on South Capitol. Eighteen, nineteen years old,

It looked to me as if the girl's breasts had been sliced right off her chest. Her face had been attacked, too. A checklist of deviant behavior ran through my head,

maybe even younger. So who is he?"

for a while: expressive aggression (check), sadism (check), sexualization (check), offense planning (check). Check, check, check.

the kind of things I hadn't thought about

"It's Shafer, John. It's the Weasel. He's back in Washington. But that's not the worst of it. I wish to hell it were."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 40

We knew a bar that was open, so Sampson and I went for a beer after we left the slaughter scene on New Jersey Avenue. We were officially off duty, but I had my beeper clipped on. So did John. There were only two other guys drinking in the gin mill, so we pretty much had the place to ourselves.

Didn't matter one way or the other. It was good just to be with John. I needed to talk to him. I really needed to talk to Sampson about something.

"You sure it's Shafer?" he asked me once we had our beers and some nuts in front of us. I told him about the disturbing tape I'd seen from Sunrise

Valley. But not about the other threats, or the ransom. I couldn't, and that bothered me a lot. I'd never lied to Sampson, and this felt like a lie. "It's him. No doubt about it."

"That's messed up," John said. "The Weasel. Why would he come back to

Washington? He almost got caught here the last time."

"Maybe that's why. The thrill of it, the challenge."

"Yeah, and maybe he misses us. I won't miss him this time. Put one right between his eyes."

I sipped my beer. "Shouldn't you be home with Billie?" I asked.
"It's a work night. Billie is cool with

"It's a work night. Billie is cool with it, with my job. Her sister's staying with "How's that working out? Married life? Billie's sister at the house?"

"I like Trina, so it's okay. Funny, things I couldn't imagine getting used to aren't a problem. I'm happy. First time, maybe. Floatin' on a cloud, man."

I grinned at Sampson. "Ain't love grand?"

us for a while, anyway. They're both

asleep by now."

"I'm ready," I said, and smiled.
"You think so? I wonder about that

"Yes, it is. You ought to try it again

"You think so? I wonder about that. Are you really ready?"

"Listen, John, there's something I need to talk to you about."
"Figured that out already. Something

about that bombing. Then the murder of Thomas Weir. Shafer back in town." Sampson looked into my eyes. "So what is it?"

"This is confidential, John. They've

made a threat against Washington. It's pretty serious. We've been warned about an attack. They demanded a huge ransom to stop it."

"Which can't be paid?" Sampson

asked. "The United States doesn't negotiate with terrorists."

"I don't know about that. I'm not sure if anybody does, except maybe the president. I'm on the inside, but not that far inside. Anyway, now you know as much as I do."

"And I should act accordingly."

"Yeah, you should. But you can't talk about this with anybody. Not anyone, not even Billie."

Sampson took my hand. "I got it.

Thank you."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 41

On the way home late that night I was guilt-tripping and a little shaky about what I'd told Sampson, but I felt I'd had no choice. John was my family, simple as that. Also, maybe I was on burnout because we were working eighteen-to-twenty-hour days. Maybe the stress was getting to me. There was a lot of disaster planning going on behind the scenes, but nobody I talked to knew where we were on the ransom demands. Everybody's nerves were frayed, including mine. About twelve hours were gone on our deadline.

Other questions burned in my mind. Was Shafer the one who had murdered

Why risk it? I sure as hell doubted it was a coincidence that the young woman's body had been dumped less than two miles from my house.

It was late and I wanted to think about something else, anything else, but I

couldn't get my head off the case. I drove the old Porsche faster than I needed to on the mostly empty streets, knowing I had to focus on the driving. It didn't

and maimed the woman we'd found on New Jersey Avenue? I was almost sure he was, and Sampson agreed. But why commit that type of grisly murder now?

really work too well, though.

I pulled into my driveway and sat in the car for a few minutes. I tried to clear my head before I went inside. Things to

was only eleven on the coast. I felt as though my head would explode. And I knew when I'd felt this way before: the last time the Weasel went on a killing spree in Washington. Only this was so much worse.

do. I needed to give Jamilla a call—it

past the old piano on the sunporch. I thought about sitting down and playing. A little blues? Broadway? At two in the morning? Sure, why not. I couldn't sleep, anyway.

I finally trudged inside the house,

get it. Awhh, Jesus, who the hell?

I snatched up the phone on the kitchen wall near the fridge.

The phone began to ring and I ran to

"Hello. Cross."

Nothing.
And then a hang-up.

Seconds later, the phone rang again. I picked up after one ring.

Another hang-up.

And another after that.

I took the phone off the hook. Set it on the counter inside Nana's oven mitt to muffle the sound.

I heard a noise behind me.

I turned around quickly.

Nana was standing there in the doorway, all five feet, ninety-five pounds of her. Her brown eyes were fired up.

"What's wrong, Alex? What are you doing up?" she asked. "This isn't right. Who's calling the house this late at

night?"

I sat down at the kitchen table, and over some tea I told Nana everything that I could.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 42

The next day I was paired up with Monnie Donnelley, which was good news for both of us. Our assignment was to gather information on Colonel Shafer and the mercenaries being used in the attacks; our timetable—fast, incredibly fast.

Monnie, as usual, already knew a lot about the subject, and she talked nonstop while she retrieved even more data for the case. Once Monnie gets going, it's difficult to get her to stop, almost impossible. The woman is relentless about facts being the way to truth.

"Mercenaries, the 'dogs of war,' socalled. Mostly former soldiers from What I mean is that they aren't subject to the U.S. military's code of conduct or even our laws. Technically, they're subject to the laws of the countries where they serve, but some of those hot spots have piss-poor judicial systems, if they have any system at all." "So they're pretty much on their own. That would appeal to Shafer. Most mercenaries work for private companies now?"

Monnie nodded. "Yes, they do,

Grasshopper. Private military companies, PMCs. Earn as much as

Special Forces—Delta Force, Army Rangers, SEALs, SAS if they're Brits. Many are totally legit, Alex, though they operate in a kind of legal netherworld.

twenty thousand a month. Average probably closer to three or four. Some of the larger PMCs have their own artillery, tanks. Even fighter jets, if you can believe it."

"I can. These days I can believe

anything. Hell, I even believe in the big bad Wolf."

Monnie turned away from her

computer screen and looked at me. I sensed that one of her famous "stats" was on the way. "Alex, the Defense Department currently has over three thousand contracts with U.S.-based PMCs. Contracts are valued at over three hundred billion dollars. You believe that?"

I whistled. "Well, that sort of puts

the Wolf's demands in perspective, doesn't it?"

"Pay the man," said Monnie. "Then we'll go catch him."

disagree. At least that could be a plan."

Monnie went back to her computer.

"It's not my call. But I don't entirely

"Here's a tidbit on the Weasel. Worked with an outfit called Mainforce

International. Listen to this—offices in London, Washington, and Frankfurt."

That got my attention "Three of the

That got my attention. "Three of the targeted cities. What else do you have on Mainforce?"

"Let me see. Clients include financial institutions; oil, of course; precious stones."

"Diamonds?"

Shafer was going under the name Timothy Heath. Worked in Guinea to 'free' some mines taken over by 'the populace.' Heath/Shafer was arrested in

Guinea, charged with trying to bribe local officials. He had a million pounds

on him, cash, when he was arrested."

"Are a mercenary's best friend.

"How did he get out of that one?"
"Says he escaped. Hmmm. No detail.
No follow-up, either. Odd."
"That's one thing the Weasel's
always been good at. Wiggling out of

tight spots. Getting away with it. Maybe that's why the Wolf wanted him for this

"No," said Monnie, and she turned and stared into my eyes, "the Wolf

iob."

wanted him because Geoffrey Shafer has gotten under your skin. And because you're close to the director of the FBI."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 43

At two that same afternoon, I was on my way to Cuba, Guantánamo Bay. Gitmo, as it's called. I was on a mission from the director, and also the president of the United States. Lately, our base at Guantánamo Bay had been much in the news on account of more than seven hundred "detainees" being held there in connection with the war on terror. An interesting place, to say the least. A historical one, for better or worse.

Once I landed, I was escorted to Camp Delta, the site of most of the cellblocks. All around the prison area were several guard towers and razor wire. According to a rumor I'd heard on receiving in excess of a hundred million dollars a year for services provided at Guantánamo Bay. The man I was there for was originally from Saudi Arabia. He was

being kept in the small psych ward on

the ride down, one U.S. corporation was

the grounds, which was in a separate building from the cellblocks. I wasn't given his name. Nor was I told very much about him, except that he had important information about the Wolf.

I met with the prisoner inside a "resistance and resistance and resistance

"quiet room," an isolation cell with mattresses on the walls and no windows. Two small chairs had been brought into the room for the purpose of the interview. "I've told the others everything I know," he said to me in very good English. "I thought that we made a deal for my release. I was promised as much two days ago. Everybody here lies. So

who are you?"

Washington to listen to your story. Just tell me everything again. This can only help you. It can't hurt."

The prisoner nodded wearily. "No, nothing can hurt me anymore. It's true. You know, I have been here two hundred

"I was sent down here from

and twenty-seven days. I did not do anything wrong. Not a single thing. I was teaching high school in Newark, New Jersey. I have never been charged with anything. What do you think of that?"

"I think you have a way out of here now. Just tell me what you know about the Russian who goes by the name Wolf."

"And why do I talk to you? I think I may have missed that part. Who are you, again?"

I shrugged. I'd been told not to reveal who I was to the prisoner. "You have everything to gain, nothing to lose. You want to get out of here, and I can help you achieve your goal." "But will you, sir?"

"I will help you if I can."

So the man talked to me. In fact, he went on for over an hour and a half. His life had been interesting. He had worked in security for the royal family in Saudi Arabia, sometimes traveling with them in the United States. He liked what he saw here and decided to stay, but he still had friends back home who worked in security.

"They spoke to me about a Russian who had talks with dissident royal family members, of whom there are many. This Russian was looking for capital to finance a big operation that would seriously hurt the United States as

well as certain countries in Western

Europe. A doomsday scenario was discussed, though I don't have specifics."

"Do you have a name for the Russian? Where was the man from?

Russian? Where was the man from What country, what city?"

said the prisoner. "The Russian—it is my impression it was a woman, not a man. I am confident about my information. The code name or whatever

"This is the most interesting thing,"

was definitely Wolf.

"Now what?" the prisoner asked when he was finished talking. "Will you help me?"

"No, now you repeat your story," I said. "From the top."

"It will be the same," he said.

"Because it is the truth."

Late that night I left Gitmo for Washington. Although it was very late, I had to report on my interview with the

Washington. Although it was very late, I had to report on my interview with the prisoner. I met with Director Burns and Tony Woods in the director's small

go," I told Burns.

"So you believe him?"

I shook my head. "I think he was given information, for whatever reason. I don't know if the information is accurate.

Neither does he. I think that either we

"Alex, was the Wolf in Saudi

I repeated myself. "I think he told us

Arabia? Is it possible the Wolf is a

what he was told. Let the schoolteacher

"I think we should let the prisoner

conference room. Burns wanted to know my bottom line on the Saudi's credibility. Had we learned something useful about the Wolf? Was he

negotiating in the Middle East?

charge him or we set him free."

woman?"

go home to Newark." And Burns snapped at me, "I heard vou the first time."

He let out a long sigh. "I was with

the president today, his advisers. They don't see how we can make a deal with these bastards. It's their position that we won't." Burns stared at me. "Somehow, we have to find the Wolf. In the next two days."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 44

It's extraordinarily bad to be waiting for something devastating to happen and not be able to do a damn thing to prevent it. I was up at five the next morning and I had breakfast with Nana. "We have to talk about you and the kids," I said as I sat at the kitchen table with coffee and a slice of unbuttered cinnamon toast. "You awake for this?"

"I'm fully awake, Alex. How about you?" she said. "You ready to match wits with me?"

I nodded, and bit my tongue. Nana had something to say to me, and I was supposed to listen. I've learned that no matter how old you get, to some extent you always remain a child in the eyes of your parents and grandparents. That was certainly true with Nana Mama. "Go ahead, I'm listening," I said.

"You better be. The reason that I'm not going to move out of Washington,"

Nana began, "is twofold. Are you with me so far? Good.

"First of all, this has been my home for eighty-three years. This is where Regina Hope was born, and where I plan to die. That may be a little foolish, I know, but it is what it is. I love the city of Washington, love our neighborhood, and I especially love this old house where so much has happened to me. It goes, I go with it. It's sad, really sad, but the situation here in Washington is a part

now, Alex."

I had to smile a little at my grandmother. "You know, you just

of life now. This is the way of the world

grandmother. "You know, you just jumped right back into your old schoolteacher tone of voice. You realize that?"

"Maybe I did, and if so, then so what? It's a serious subject," Nana said. "I didn't sleep most of the night. I was

lying there in the dark, thinking about

what I wanted to say to you. Now, what do you have to say on the subject? You want us to move, don't you?" "Nana, if the kids got hurt, I'd never

be able to forgive myself."

"Neither would I" she said "Coor

"Neither would I," she said. "Goes without saying." Her eyes remained

Nana stared deeply into my eyes, but she was thinking, reconsidering, I hoped.

steely. God, she is tough.

"This is where I live, Alex. I have to stay. If you think it's the right thing to do, the kids should go with Aunt Tia for a while. Now . . . is that all you're going to eat? A measly slice of toast? Let me make you a decent breakfast. I'm sure you have a long day in front of you, a terrible day."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 45

The Wolf was in the Middle East, so at least some of the rumors about him appeared to be true.

The meeting, which the Wolf called "a little fund-raiser," took place in a city of tents in the desert about seventy miles southwest of Riyadh in Saudi Arabia. Those present were split between the Arab world and Asia. And then there was the Wolf, who called himself "a world traveler, a citizen of no particular country."

But was this person really the Wolf? Or merely a representative? A stand-in? No one knew for certain. Wasn't the Wolf supposed to be female? That was

But this man was tall, with long dark brown hair and a full beard, and the

one of the current rumors.

possibly a true mastermind.

other participants couldn't help thinking he would be hard to disguise, and presumably easy to find, but that didn't seem to be the case; it only enhanced his reputation as a person of mystery, and

So did his behavior during the half hour or so before the meeting began. While some sipped whiskey and others mint tea and chatted amicably, the Wolf

While some sipped whiskey and others mint tea and chatted amicably, the Wolf stood off to the side, talking to no one and impatiently waving off the few who approached him. He seemed so above it all.

The weather was balmy, so it was

decided to hold the meeting outside in the open air. The participants left the tent and were seated according to country of origin.

The business meeting was then

called to order and the Wolf took center

stage. He addressed the gathering in English. He knew all of them spoke the language, or at least understood it well enough.

"I am here to report that everything is going very well so far, very much

according to plan. We should all rejoice,

give thanks."

"How do we know this other than your word?" asked one of the principals at the meeting. The Wolf knew the man was a mujahid, a fighter, a warrior for

Islam.

The Wolf smiled genially. "As you said, you have my word. And perhaps

not in this country, but most of the world has televisions, newspapers, and radios to verify that we've created problems for the Americans, the English, the Germans.

Actually, CNN is available here—inside the tent—if you'd like some validation other than my word."

The Wolf's dark eyes shifted away from the mujahid, who was now red-faced, embarrassed, but also clearly angry.

"The plan is working, but now it's time for another donation to keep all our important pieces in motion. I'll go around the table and you can signal if to spend money to make money. A Western idea, perhaps, but a true one."

The Wolf went from face to face,

receiving nods or raised hands as he

you are in agreement with me. You have

proceeded—except from the one Arab troublemaker, who sat with his arms folded defiantly and said, "I need to hear more. Your word is not enough."

"Understood," said the Wolf. "I have gotten your message, and now I have one

In a split second the Wolf raised his hand—and a pistol shot rang out. The bearded Saudi fell from his chair, dead on the spot, lifeless eyes staring up at the heavens.

for you, warrior."

"Does anyone else need to hear

Wolf asked. "Do we move on to the next important phase of our war against the West?"

No one said a word.

more? Or is my word good enough?" the

"Good. Then we move on to the next

phase," said the Wolf. "This is exciting, no? Trust me, we are winning. Allah Akbar." God is great. And so am I.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 46

I was feeling relatively peaceful at 6:15 in the morning, driving to work along Independence Avenue, coffee cup in hand, Jill Scott singing on the radio. Suddenly my cell phone went off and I knew that all was lost.

Kurt Crawford was on the line and he sounded excited, wouldn't give me a chance to get in a word. "Alex, Geoffrey Shafer was just spotted on a surveillance tape in New York City. He visited an apartment that we were watching before this mess even began. We think we've found the cell that might be ready to strike in Manhattan.

"They're al Qaeda, Alex. What the

New York this morning. We're holding a seat for you, so get on your horse out to Andrews."

I grabbed the "bubble" off the

hell does that mean? We want you in

passenger seat and slapped it on the roof of the car. It felt a little like my old D.C. PD days.

I headed out to Andrews Air Force

Base, and less than half an hour later I was on board a jet-black Bell helicopter bound for the Downtown Manhattan Heliport on the East River. As we flew over the city, I imagined New York in full panic. We had to face one real problem: it was physically impossible to evacuate everyone in the target cities. They were just too large. Plus, we had

strike immediately. So far, word of the Wolf's threat had not leaked to the media, but the strikes in Nevada, England, and Germany had the whole world on edge.

on the East River I was rushed to the FBI offices in lower Manhattan. Tense

As soon as I arrived at the heliport

been warned. If we attempted an evacuation, the Wolf had promised to

high-level meetings had been going on there since early that morning, when someone looking at surveillance tapes recognized Shafer. What was he doing in New York now? And visiting with al Qaeda? Suddenly the rumors about the Wolf's travels in the Middle East made some sense. But what was going on? that was staying in a small brick building near the Holland Tunnel. It wasn't clear whether Shafer was still inside. He had entered at nine the night before and no one had seen him leave.

"The others are clearly members of

thorough briefing about a terrorist cell

Inside Federal Plaza I got a quick,

al-Jihad," I was told by Angela Bell, the information analyst assigned to the counterterrorism squad in New York. She said that the decrepit, three-story structure where the cell was holed up was shared by a Korean import-export business and a Spanish-translation business. The terrorist cell was posing as a relief charity called Afghan Children Assistance.

had in hand, there were several indicators of terrorist planning and activity around New York. Chemicals and mixing apparatuses had turned up in a self-storage space in Long Island City. The place had been rented by an

occupant of the property near the

Based on the surveillance reports we

Holland Tunnel; a pickup truck owned by a cell member had been modified with heavy-duty springs to handle a very heavy load. A possible bomb? What kind of bomb?

That morning plans were being coordinated for raids on the Long Island storage facility and the walk-up near the

Holland Tunnel. Finally, about four in the afternoon, I



Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 47

We had been warned not to do this. But how could we obey? What's more, how could anyone expect us to obey when so many lives were in danger? And maybe we could argue that the raid was solely a hit on al Qaeda and had nothing to do with the Wolf. Hell, maybe it didn't.

The apartment where the terrorists were staying, and where Geoffrey Shafer might still be, was a fairly easy one to monitor. The front of the redbrick building had only a single entrance. The rear fire escapes emptied onto a narrow alley where we had already put closed-circuit wireless cameras. One side of the

other opened onto a small parking lot.

Was the Weasel still inside?

An HRT assault force and a SWAT

building abutted a textbook printer; the

team from the NYPD had taken over the top floor of a TriBeCa meatpacking plant a couple of blocks from the Holland Tunnel. We assembled there, fine-tuning the assault, waiting for word to come about whether the attack would happen or not.

HRT wanted a go, and they were

pushing hard for an assault between two and three in the morning. I didn't know what I would do if it were my call. We had a cell of known terrorists, and possibly Shafer, in our sights. But we'd been warned about the consequences. It could also be a setup, some kind of test for us.

At a little before midnight word

began to circulate that HRT surveillance

had turned up something else. About one in the morning I was called in to a small bookkeeping room that was serving as headquarters. It was getting close to put-up-or-shut-up time.

Michael Ainslie from our New York office was the senior agent in charge. He

office was the senior agent in charge. He was a tall, reed-thin, good-looking man with loads of experience in the field, but I had the distinct impression he would have been more comfortable on a tennis court than in the middle of a dangerous mess like this one.

"Here's what we have so far from

"One of HRT's snipers picked up a couple of images and then we shot some more. We think it's all pretty good news. Take a look for yourselves."

surveillance," Ainslie told the group.

The visual images had been downloaded to a laptop, and Ainslie played them for us. The video stream was a series of wide and tight shots showing half a dozen windows on the east side of the building.

"We were concerned that these windows haven't been covered up," Ainslie pointed out. "These little shits are supposed to be smart and careful, right? Anyway, we've identified five males and two females inside the building. I'm sorry to say that Colonel

Shafer hasn't shown up on any of the surveillance tapes. Not so far, anyway.

"We don't have anything on him leaving the building, either, just going

inside. We're using thermal imaging to see if we might have missed him or any others." The Washington PD hadn't been able to afford thermal, but I'd seen it work since coming to the Bureau. It picked up heat variances, hot spots,

which allowed surveillance to see right through walls.

Ainslie pointed to the close-up shot that was on the laptop screen now. "Here's where it gets interesting," he said, and froze a shot showing two men

seated at a small table in the kitchen.
"On the left is Karim al-Lilyas. He's

hit list; he's definitely al Qaeda. Suspected of involvement in the 'ninetyeight bombings of our embassies in Dar es Salaam and Nairobi. We don't know when he arrived, or why, but he sure as

number fourteen on Homeland Security's

"The man beside al-Lilyas, Ahmed el-Masry, is big number eight on the list. He's hot. He's also an engineer. Neither of these bastards was on earlier surveillance tapes.

hell is here now.

"Both must have just snuck into town. For what reason? Under ordinary circumstances we'd be in that kitchen with them right now, making mint tea for everybody, getting ready for a nice long chat. downtown and in Washington right now. We ought to hear something soon, one

"They have these same pictures

way or the other."

Ainslie looked around the room and

finally cracked a smile. "For the record, I recommended that we go in, make some tea, have that chat."

The small room broke into loud

applause. For a brief moment there, it was almost fun.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 48

Some of the more devil-may-care, gung-ho guys from the Hostage Rescue Team, which is just about all of them, call this kind of dangerous operation "five minutes of panic and thrill. Their panic, our thrill." The very personal thrill for me would be bringing down Geoffrey Shafer.

HRT and SWAT desperately wanted to go into the building and were at the ready. Two dozen heavily armed, state-of-the-art warriors were strutting around the wooden floor of the meatpacking plant; they were pumped up and supremely confident in their ability to do the job right and very quickly. Watching

them, it was hard not to be, and even harder not to ask to be included in the raid.

The real problem was that if they succeeded, we all might lose. We had

been warned and been given dramatic

lessons about what would happen if we disregarded the orders handed down by the Wolf. And yet, the men under our surveillance might be his attack team in New York. So what did we do?

I knew every detail about the job.

full-team deployment of the group, including both HRT and NYPD SWAT. There were six assault teams and six sniper teams, which HRT believed was two too many. They didn't want help

Taking down the building would involve

and Zulu; each included seven members. One FBI team was assigned to each side of the building; SWAT would assist on the front and room only.

from SWAT. The HRT sniper teams were called X-Ray, Whiskey, Yankee,

of the building; SWAT would assist on the front and rear only.

The interesting thing for me was the certainty that HRT was the superior assault team, the opposite of what I'd felt when I was with the D.C. police. The

HRT snipers were disguised in "urban hide" kits, individualized bunches of black muslin, rope, dark PVC tubing,

and the like. Each sniper had a specific target, and every window and door in the building was covered.

The question remained: were we going in?

And was Shafer still there? Was the Weasel in that building right now?

At 2:30 in the morning I joined a

two-man sniper team in the brownstone directly across the street from the targeted one. This was starting to get very intense and very hairy.

The snipers were holed up inside a ten-by-ten room. They had made a tent out of black muslin set back about three feet from the window. The window itself was kept closed, and I was given an explanation by one of them. "If we get

an explanation by one of them. "If we get the signal to go, we'll use a lead pipe to knock out the windowpane. Seems kind of crude, but nobody's come up with a better option."

There wasn't too much small talk in

The seconds were ticking away and I could just about measure them with my own heartbeats. The assault team was the "eyes and ears" for Command, and all we could do was wait for our official orders to come down.

Go.

I finally broke the silence in the

small room. "I'm going down on the street. I need to be down there for this."

him? How could I stay up there?

No go.

the cramped, hot room, but for the next half hour I got to watch the targeted building through a sniper scope from a backup rifle. My heart was starting to race pretty good now. I was searching for Shafer in the scope. What if I saw

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 49

This was more like it.

I set up with an HRT assault team just around the corner from the terrorist hideout. Technically I wasn't supposed to be there—so officially I wasn't—but I'd called Ned Mahoney and he smoothed the way for me.

Three o'clock in the A.M. The minutes passed very slowly, without more news or clarification from Command in New York or FBI headquarters in the Hoover Building in Washington. What were they thinking? How could anybody make an impossible decision like this one?

Go?

Obey the Wolf?
Disobey and take the consequences?

No go?

Three-thirty came and went. Then four o'clock. Still no word from the higher-ups back at headquarters.

higher-ups back at headquarters.

I got strapped up in a black flight suit with full armor and was given an MP-5.

The HRT guys all knew about Shafer and my personal stake in this.

The senior agent in charge sat down beside me on the ground. "You okay? Everything all right?"

"I was D.C. Homicide. I've gone into a lot of places, lot of hot spots."

"I know you have. If Shafer's in there, we'll get him. Maybe you'll get him." Yeah, maybe I'll blow that creep away after all.

And then, amazingly, we got the order to go. Green light! Five minutes of

panic and thrill.

First thing, I heard the snipers breaking windows across the street.

Then we were running toward the hideout building. Everybody was strapped up for war, all in black flight suits and armed to the teeth.

Two eight-passenger Bell helicopters suddenly appeared and

veered in toward the roof of the brick building. They hovered and assault specialists began to "fast-rope" down. One team of four was climbing up the side of the building, an amazing sight

in itself.

slogans flashed through my head—speed, suspense, and violence of action. It was happening just like that.

I heard explosive entry charges

Another of HRT's "go to war"

blasts within seconds. There would be no negotiating as part of this assault.

blasting out doors, three or four different

We were in. This was good—I was in.

Gunshots echoed through the dark halls of the building. Then machine-gun

I made it up to the second floor. A male with wild, bushy hair came out of a

doorway. He had a rifle.
"Hands in the air!" I velled at him

"Hands in the air!" I yelled at him. "In the air. High."

Shafer?" I screamed at him.

The man just shook his head back and forth, back and forth, looking dazed

hands up and let the rifle drop.

He understood English—he put his

"Where's Colonel Shafer? Where's

and confused.

I left the prisoner with a couple of HRT guys, then hurried upstairs to the third floor. I wanted the Weasel so badly

third floor. I wanted the Weasel so badly now. Was he in there somewhere?

A waif of a woman in black suddenly ran across a large living-room

area at the head of the stairs.

"Stop!" I bellowed at her. "You—stop!"

But she didn't—she went right out an open window in the living room. I heard

Sickening to watch.

And finally I heard "Secure. The building is secure! All floors secure!"

her scream, then nothing after that.

But nothing about Geoffrey Shafer, nothing about the Weasel.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 50

The HRT and NYPD SWAT teams were swarming around the building. All the doors had been blown off their hinges, and several windows were shattered. So much for "knock and announce" protocol, but the plan seemed to have worked well from what I could see so far. Except for finding Shafer. Where was that son of a bitch? I'd missed him like this a couple of times before.

The woman who'd gone out the topfloor window was dead, which is what happens when you plunge headfirst three stories down onto a sidewalk. I congratulated a few HRT guys as I made my way through the top floor; they did the same for me. I met Michael Ainslie on the stairs.

"Washington wants you involved with the interrogations," he told me, not seeming too pleased. "There are six of them. How do you want to handle it?"

"Shafer?" I asked Ainslie. "Anything

on him?"

"They say he isn't here. We don't

know for sure. We're still looking for him."

I couldn't help feeling a letdown

about the Weasel, but I sucked it up. I walked inside a workspace that had been turned into a quasi-apartment. Sleeping bags and a few stained mattresses were strewn across the bare

wooden floor. Five males and a woman sat together handcuffed like prisoners of war, which I suppose they were.

I stared at them without saving a

I stared at them without saying a word at first.

Then I pointed to the youngest-

looking male: small, thin, wire-rimmed glasses, scruffy beard, of course. "Him," I said, and started to walk out of the

room. "I want that one. Bring him now!"

After the young male was taken from the main living area to a smaller adjoining bedroom, I looked around the main room again.

I pointed to another youngish male with long curly black hair and a full beard. "That one," I said, and he was also escorted out. No explanation.

Next I was introduced to an FBI interpreter, a man named Wasid who spoke Arabic, Farsi, Pashto. We entered the bedroom next door together.

"He's probably Saudi, possibly all

of them are," the interpreter told me on the way in. Wherever he was from, the small, thin young man seemed extremely

nervous. Sometimes Islamic terrorists are more comfortable with the idea of dying than with being captured and questioned by the Devil. That was my leverage here: I was the Devil.

I encouraged the translator to engage

the terrorist suspect in small talk about his hometown and then his difficult transition to life in New York, the Devil's den. I asked that he slip in that I few FBI agents who wasn't inherently evil. "Tell him I read the Koran. Beautiful book."

In the meantime, I sat and tried to

model the terrorist's behavior, to mimic

was a fairly good man and one of the

it, without being too obvious. He sat forward in his chair. So did I. If I could become the first American he would learn to trust, even a little, he might let something slip.

It didn't work too well at first, but he

did answer a few questions about his city of origin; he maintained that he came to America on a student visa, but I knew he didn't have a passport. He also didn't know the location of any universities in New York, not even NYU.

Finally, I got up and stomped angrily out of the room. I went to see the second suspect and repeated the same process with him.

Then I returned to the skinny youth. I

Then I returned to the skinny youth. I carried in a stack of reports and threw them on the floor. There was a loud whack, and he actually jumped.

whack, and he actually jumped.

"Tell him he lied to me!" I yelled at the translator. "Tell him I trusted him.

Tell him the FBI and CIA aren't filled

with fools, whatever he's been told in his country. Just keep talking to him. Yelling is even better. Don't let him talk until he has something to tell us. Then yell over whatever he has to say. Tell him he's going to die and then we'll track

down his entire family in Saudi Arabia!"

going back and forth between the two rooms. My years as a therapist made me fairly good at reading people, especially in a disturbed state. I picked out a third terrorist, the remaining woman, and added her to the mix. CIA officers were

For the next couple of hours, I kept

added her to the mix. CIA officers were questioning the subjects every time I left a room. No torture, but it was a constant barrage.

In the FBI training sessions at Quantico, they talk about their principles of interrogation as the RPMs:

of interrogation as the RPMs: rationalization, projection, and minimization. I rationalized like crazy: "You're a good person, Ahmed. Your beliefs are true ones. I wish I had your strong faith." I projected blame: "It isn't

committed no actual crimes here in America. Our weak laws and judicial system can protect you." And I got down to business: "Tell me about the Englishman. We know that his name is Geoffrey Shafer. He's called the Weasel. He was here yesterday. We have videotapes, photographs, audiotapes. We know he was here. Where is he

now? He's the one we really want."

I kept at it, repeating my pitch again

and again. "What did the Englishman want you to do? He's the guilty one, not

your fault. You're just a young guy. The United States government can be evil at times. Sometimes I think we need to be punished myself." I minimized consequences: "So far, you've

this. Just fill in a few blanks for us. You'll be able to go home." Then I repeated the same questions about the Wolf

you or your friends. We already know

Nothing worked with any of the terrorists, though, not even the young

ones. They were tough; more disciplined and more experienced than they looked; smart and clearly very motivated.

Why not? They believed something. Maybe there's something to be learned from that, too.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 51

The next terrorist I chose was older, ruddily good-looking, with a thick mustache and white, nearly perfect teeth. He spoke English and told me, with some pride, that he had studied at Berkeley and Oxford.

"Biochemistry and electrical engineering. Does that surprise you?" His name was Ahmed el-Masry, and he was number eight on Homeland Security's hit list.

He was very willing to talk about Geoffrey Shafer.

"Yes, the Englishman came here. You are right about this, of course. Video- and audiotapes don't usually lie. he wanted to talk to us about."

"And did he?"

El-Masry frowned deeply. "No, not

He claimed to have something important

really. We thought he might be one of your agents."

"So why did he come here?" I asked.

"Why did you consent to see him?"

El-Masry shrugged off my question.

"Curiosity. He said that he had access to tactical nuclear explosive devices."

I winced, and my heart started to beat a whole lot faster. Nuclear devices in the metropolitan New York area?

"We agreed to talk with him. We believed he meant suitcase nuclear bombs. Suitcase nukes. Difficult to

"Did he have the weapons?"

professor, you see. To look for employment."

A shudder passed through me. Unlike conventional warheads, suitcase nukes were designed to go off at ground level. They were about the size of a large

valise and could easily be operated by

They could also be concealed just about anywhere, even carried on foot around New York, Washington, London,

an infantryman.

obtain, but not impossible. As you may know, the Soviet Union built them during the Cold War. No one knows how many, or what happened to them. The Russian Mafiya has tried to sell them in recent years, or so it's rumored. I wouldn't actually know. I came here to be a

"So, did he have access to suitcase nukes?" I asked el-Masry.

Frankfurt.

He shrugged. "We are just students and teachers. In truth, why should we care about nuclear weapons?"

I thought that I understood what he was doing now—bargaining for himself and his people. "Why did one of your students kill

herself diving from a window?" I asked.

El-Masry's eyes narrowed in pain. "She was afraid all the time she was in New York. She was an orphan, her

parents killed in an unjust war by Americans." I nodded slowly as if I understood

and sympathized with what he was

Shafer have access to nuclear weapons?" I asked again. "That's the question I need answered. It's important for you, and for your people. Are you following me?"

"I believe so. Are you suggesting that we would be deported if we cooperate? Sent home? Since we've

telling me. "All right, you haven't committed any crimes here. We've been watching you for weeks. But did Colonel

I came right back at him. "Some of you have committed serious crimes in the past. Murders. The others will be questioned, and then they will be sent

committed no actual crimes?" el-Masry asked. He was trying to pin down the

home." He nodded. "All right, then. I did not get the impression that Mr. Shafer had

tactical nuclear weapons in his possession. You say that you've been watching us. Maybe he knew that also?

Does that make sense to you? That you were set up? I don't pretend to understand this myself. But these are thoughts that pass through my mind as I sit and talk to you." Unfortunately, what he was telling

me made sense. I was afraid that might be what had happened. A trap, a test. It was the Wolf's pattern so far.

"How did Shafer get out of here without our seeing him leave?" I asked.

"The basement in the building

Colonel Shafer knew that. He seemed to know a lot about us." It was nine in the morning by the time I left the building. I felt exhausted,

connects to a building to the south.

as though I could lie down and sleep in an alleyway. The suspects would be transported soon, and the whole area

was still shut down, even the Holland Tunnel because of our fear that it might be a primary target, that it might

suddenly be blown up. Had everything been a test, a trap?

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 52

The day's weirdness wasn't over.

A crowd had gathered outside the building, and as I pushed a way out toward my ride, someone called to me. "Dr. Cross!"

Dr. Cross? Who was calling me?

A kid in a tan and crimson windbreaker waved so that I'd see him.

"Dr. Cross, over here! Dr. Alex Cross! I need to talk to you, man."

I walked over to the young man, who was probably in his late teens. I stopped and leaned in close to him. "How do you know my name?" I asked.

He shook his head and backed up a step. "You were warned, man," he said.

"You were warned by the Wolf!"

As soon as the words were out of his mouth I was all over him, grabbing at his hair his jacket. I took him down on the

hair, his jacket. I took him down on the ground in a headlock. I fell on top of him with all my weight.

Red-faced, his lean body torquing

"Hey! hey! I was paid to give you a message. Get the fuck off me. Guy gave me a hundred bucks. I'm just a messenger, man. English guy told me you were Dr. Alex Cross."

The youth, the messenger, looked into my eyes. "You don't seem like no doctor to me."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 53

The Wolf was in New York. He couldn't miss the big deadline, not for all the money in the world. This was going to be too good, too delicious not to savor.

The negotiations were really heating up now. The U.S. president, the British prime minister, the German chancellor of course, none of them wanted to make a deal, to be exposed for the incredible weaklings they were. One couldn't deal with terrorists, could one? What kind of precedent would it set? They needed even more pressure, more stress, more convincing before they collapsed.

Hell, he could do that. He would be

fools. The whole thing was so predictable—to him, anyway.

He went for a long walk on the East Side of Manhattan. A constitutional. He was feeling at the top of his game. How

could the governments of the world

only too happy to oblige, to torture these

compete with him? He had every advantage. No politics, no media pundits, bureaucracies, laws or ethics to get in his way. Who could beat that? He returned to one of several apartments he owned around the world, this one a stunning penthouse overlooking the East River, and made a phone call. Lightly squeezing his black rubber ball, he spoke to a senior agent from the New York FBI office, one of

their top people, a woman.

The agent told him everything the Bureau knew so far and what they were

doing to find him, which was basically nothing of consequence. They had a far better chance of suddenly finding bin Laden than of finding him.

The Wolf yelled into the telephone receiver. "I'm supposed to pay you for this shit? For telling me what I already know? I should kill you instead."

But then the Russian laughed. "Just a nasty joke, my friend. You bring me good news. And I have news for you: there is going to be an incident in New York very soon. Stay away from the bridges. Bridges are very dangerous places. I know this from past



Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 54

Bill Capistran was the man with the plan, and also a very bad and dangerous attitude—serious anger-management problems, to put it mildly. But soon he'd also be the man with 250 large in his bank account in the Caymans. All he had to do was his particular job, and what he

had to do wasn't going to be that hard. I

can do this, no problemo.

Capistran was twenty-nine years old, slim and sinewy, originally from Raleigh, North Carolina. He had played lacrosse for a year at North Carolina State, then left for the Marines. After a three-year stint he'd been recruited to do

merc work for a company out of

been approached by a guy he knew from D.C., Geoffrey Shafer, and he'd agreed to do the biggest job of his career. Two hundred fifty thousand's worth.

Washington. Then two weeks ago he'd

He was on the job now.
At seven in the morning, he drove a

black Ford van east across Fifty-seventh Street in Manhattan, then turned north at First Avenue. Finally, he parked near the Fifty-ninth Street Bridge, also called the Queensboro.

He and two men in white painters'

overalls climbed out of the van, then gathered up equipment from the back. Not paint and drop cloths and aluminum ladders. Explosives. A combination of C4 and nitrate to be packed into the

point near the Manhattan side of the East River.

Capistran knew the Queensboro inside and out by now. He stared up at

the sturdy, ninety-five-year-old bridge, and what he saw was an open, flexible

bridge's lowest trusses at a strategic

structure, a cantilever-truss design, the only one of the four East River bridges that wasn't a suspension bridge. Which meant that it required a special kind of bomb, one that he just happened to have in the back of the van.

This is something else, Capistran couldn't help thinking as he and his

compadres hauled their gear toward the bridge. New York City. The East Side. All these fancy-assed big-business

for the taking. Nerves aside, he was almost enjoying himself now, and he found himself whistling a song that struck him as pretty funny. "The 59th Street Bridge Song (Feelin' Groovy)" by Simon and Garfunkel—whom he considered to be typical New York City

dicks, these blond princesses, walking around as though the world was theirs

assholes, too. Both of them—Curly and the Midget.

For the past couple of days, Capistran had been working into the wee hours with a couple of sympathetic engineering students at Stony Brook University out on Long Island. One whiz kid was from Iran, the other from

Afghanistan. They got a kick and a half

out of the irony, too: New York-trained college students helping to blow up New York. Land of the fucking free, right? They called their team the Manhattan Project. Another insider joke. At first they had considered an ANFO, a type of bomb that would blow a crater in a road for sure but was unlikely to topple a large bridge like the Queensboro. The college whizzes told Capistran he could see what an ANFO would accomplish just by setting off a firecracker on a city street. Or imagining it. The explosion would be characterized

would accomplish just by setting off a firecracker on a city street. Or imagining it. The explosion would be characterized by "coward forces which always seek the path of least resistance." In other words, the bomb would make a nasty little burn on the road, but the real

destructive power would escape up and sideways into the air.

Not good enough for today. Too

benign. Not even close to what was needed.

Then the clever-as-hell college students came upon a much better way to blow up the bridge. They instructed Capistran on how and where to attach

several small charges at different points in the foundation. This was similar to the

way demolition companies toppled old buildings, and it would work like a charm.

Since he had absolutely no interest in being caught, Capistran had considered sending divers into the East River to set

the charges on the supports. He had

that morning. He and his two associates walked out on the lower supports of the Fifty-ninth Street Bridge and nobody said boo to them.

From a distance, the ornate silver-

painted ironwork and finials had made the old bridge look rather delicate. Up close, the real power of the structure

approached the bridge several times himself. And to his surprise, he found

That's exactly the way it was early

security to be virtually nonexistent.

was revealed: the massive trusses; rivets as large as a man's kneecaps.

This sounded crazy, but it would work—his piece would work.

Sometimes he wondered how he'd gotten so sour on everything, so bitter

team that had extracted downed pilots like Scott O'Grady in Bosnia. Well, he wasn't a war hero anymore. He was just another capitalist working in the system,

and full of rage. Hell, years ago in the Marines he'd been part of the rescue

right? And that was a lot truer statement than most people could let themselves believe.

As he continued to walk out on the

As he continued to walk out on the support structure, Capistran couldn't help humming, then singing the words, "Groovy. Feeling very groovy."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 55

The strangest, most puzzling thing happened next.

The deadline passed—and nothing happened.

There was no message from the Wolf, no immediate attacks. Nothing. Silence. It was eerie, but also incredibly scary.

The Wolf was the only one who knew what was going on now—or maybe, the Wolf, the president, and a few other world leaders. Rumor had it that the president, vice president, and the cabinet had already been moved out of Washington.

This thing wouldn't stop, would it?

But after years of yellow and orange alerts from Homeland Security, no one seemed to take the threats and rumors too seriously.

The uncertainty, the war of nerves had to be part of the Wolf's plan, too. I

was in Washington for the Memorial Day weekend, and was asleep when I got a call to get over to the Hoover

I looked at the alarm clock, squinting

to focus, saw that it was three in the

Building right away.

The news stories certainly wouldn't. The Post, the New York Times, USA Today, CNN, the networks—they had all gotten hold of some version of the threats against major cities. No one knew which cities, or who was doing the threatening.

over the phone.

"I'll be right there," I said, pushing myself out of bed, cursing under my breath. I showered under hot, then cold water for a minute or two, toweled off,

morning. Now what? Have there been reprisals? If so, they weren't telling me

drove through Washington in a horrible daze. All I knew was that the Wolf was going to call in thirty minutes.

Three-thirty in the morning, after a long weekend, with the expired deadline hanging over our head. He wasn't just

threw on clothes, and got in the car and

When I arrived at the crisis room on five, there were at least a dozen others already there. We greeted one another

controlling, he was sadistic.

room, nobody seeming completely awake. A ragged line formed at the coffee table as a couple of pots finally arrived. Everybody looked nervous and on edge.

"No Danish?" said one of the other agents. "Where's the love?" But nobody

even smiled at his joke.

like old friends at somebody's wake. For the next couple of minutes, bleary-eyed agents kept filing into the conference

minutes past 3:30. He was wearing a dark suit and tie, formal for him, but especially at this time of the morning. I had the sense that he didn't have any idea what was happening, either. The Wolf was in charge, not any of us.

Director Burns came in a few

boss," Director Burns cracked after a couple of minutes of silence in the room. Finally, there was a sprinkling of laughter. "Thank you for coming," Burns added.

"And you thought I was a tough

The Wolf came on the line at 3:43. The filtered voice. The characteristic smugness and disdain.

"You're probably wondering why I scheduled a meeting in the middle of the night," he began. "Because I can. How do you like that? Because I can.

"In case you haven't been able to tell, I don't like you people very much. Not at all, actually. I have my reasons, good ones. I hate everything America stands for. So maybe this is partly about

somewhere, sometime in the past? Maybe you wronged my family. That's a part of the puzzle. Revenge is a sweet bonus for me.

revenge? Maybe you've wronged me

bonus for me.

"But let me get to the present.

Correct me if I'm wrong, but I think I instructed you not to conduct any more

"So what do you do? You bust six poor bastards in downtown Manhattan because you suspect they're working with me. Why, one poor girl was so distraught that she went out a third-floor window. I saw her fall! I suppose that

distraught that she went out a third-floor window. I saw her fall! I suppose that your thinking—such as it is—was that if you took out my operatives there, then New York City would be safe.

There's also a little matter of a deadline you missed.

"Did you think I had forgotten about

"Oh, I'm sorry, I almost forgot.

that? Well, I didn't forget about the deadline. Or the insult in your missing it. Now, watch what I can do."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 56

At 3:40 in the morning, following instructions, the Weasel took up a position on a bench in the riverfront park on Sutton Place and Fifty-seventh Street. There was a great deal that bothered him about this job, but the problems were balanced by two large positives: he was being paid a lot of money, and he was in the middle of the action again. Jesus, am I ever in the middle of the shit.

He stared down on the East River's dark, swift-moving currents. A red tugboat marked MCALLISTER BROTHERS was assisting a containership on its way. The city that never sleeps, right? Hell, the bars on

country America had become.

A lot of New Yorkers would be wide-awake soon, and they would find it exceedingly difficult to get back to sleep. There would be weeping and the

gnashing of teeth. The Wolf was going to

First and Second Avenues were just getting down to their last call. A little earlier he'd passed an animal medical center that was still open for late-night pet emergencies. Pet emergencies? Jesus, what a city, what a messed-up

make certain of that in a minute or so.

Shafer watched the seconds on his watch tick down to 3:43, but he was also keeping an eye on the river and the Queensboro Bridge.

Cars and cabs and quite a few trucks

this hour. Easily a hundred vehicles were crossing the bridge right now, probably more than that. The poor wankers!

were whizzing along up there, even at

At 3:43 Shafer pressed a button on his cell phone. This transmitted a simple coded

squirt to a small antenna on the Manhattan side of the bridge. A circuit began to close. . . . A primer fired. . . .

Microseconds later, a message straight from hell was delivered to the people of New York City, and the rest of the world.

A symbolic message. Another wake-up call. brittle. Huge rivets popped out and plummeted toward the East River. Tarmac crumbled. Reinforced concrete fractured like paper being shredded.

The upper roadbed cracked in two, then enormous sections dropped like bombs onto the lower deck, which was breaking up as well, peeling away,

twisting and twirling toward the water

Cars were falling into the water. A delivery truck carrying a full load of newspapers from a plant in Queens

below.

A massive explosion ripped through

the girders and trusses of the Fifty-ninth Street Bridge. Joints were severed instantly, shockingly, terminally. The old steel structures snapped like peanut sparked along the entire length of the bridge. More cars, dozens of them, plummeted from the bridge, fell into the river, then disappeared beneath the surface.

Some people were exiting their cars, then jumping to their death in the river.

rolled backward down the inverted roadway and then pirouetted into the East River. It was followed by more cars and trucks, dropping like lead weights. Electric lines drooped and

And in every apartment building lights began to blink on, then TVs and computers, as the people of New York heard the first reports about a terrible

Shafer could hear their terrifying

screams all the way across the river.

and that would have been unthinkable until a few years ago.

His work for the night done, Geoffrey Shafer finally rose from his

disaster that was impossible to believe

park bench and went to get some sleep. If he could sleep. He understood this much: things were just getting started.

He was on his way to London.

London Bridge, he thought. All the bridges of the world, falling, crashing down. Modern society coming apart at the seams. The sodding Wolf may be a madman, but he is a brilliant bugger at

being bad. A bloody brilliant madman!

Part Three WOLF TRACKS

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 57

The Wolf slowed his powerful black Lotus to just over a hundred miles an hour while he talked on his mobile phone, one of six he had with him in the car. He was headed toward Montauk on the tip of Long Island, but he had important business to attend to on the way, even at one in the morning. He had the American president, the German chancellor, and the British prime minister on the line. Top to top. What could beat that?

"This call can't be traced, so don't waste your time trying. My tech people are better than your people," he informed them. "Now, what's on

past the deadline. And?"

"We need more time," the English prime minister spoke up for the group. Good for him. Was he the real leader of

everybody's mind? We're eight hours

the three? That would be a surprise. The Wolf had thought of him more as a follower.

"You have no idea —" the American

president started to say, but he was cut off by the Wolf, smiling to himself, relishing the show of disrespect toward the powerful world leader.

"Stop. I don't want to hear any more lies!" he yelled into the phone.

"You have to listen to what we have to say," the German chancellor interjected. "Give us the opportunity—" then and there. He lit up a victory cigar, took a couple of satisfied puffs, then set the smoke down in the ashtray. He reconnected the call, using a second cell phone.

The Wolf ended the conversation

They were still there, waiting for him to call back. He didn't actually underestimate any of these powerful men, not really, but what choice did they have but to wait on his call?

"Do you want me to attack all four

cities? Is that what I have to do to prove how serious I am? I'll do it in a flash. I'll do it now, give the order right now. But don't tell me you need more time. You don't! The countries holding the prisoners are your puppets, for Christ's

sake.

"The real problem is that you can't be seen for what you really are. You

can't be viewed around the world as weak and powerless. But you are! How did it happen? How did you allow it to happen? Who put people like you into these positions of great power? Who elected you? The money and the political prisoners. Good-bye."

The prime minister spoke before the Wolf could disconnect again. "You have it all wrong! It is you who have a choice to make, not us. We take your point about the strength of your position versus ours. It's a given. But we cannot put this package together quickly. It can't

physically be done, and I think you know

deal with you, but we will. We have to. We just need more time to get it done. We will get it done. You have our

that. Of course we don't want to make a

promise on it."

The Wolf shrugged. The English

prime minister definitely surprised him: he was succinct, and he at least had some balls. "I'll think about it." said the Wolf.

"I'll think about it," said the Wolf, then disconnected. He picked up his cigar and savored this idea: he was the most powerful person in the world right now. And unlike any of them, he was the right man for the job.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 58

A business-class passenger who

called himself Randolph Wohler deplaned the British Airways flight from New York at 6:05 in the morning. His passport and other pieces of ID backed up his identity. It is good to be home again, thought Wohler, who was actually Geoffrey Shafer. And it's going to be even better if I get to blow London off the map.

The seventyish-looking gentleman passed through Customs without a problem. He was already thinking about his next move: a visit to his children. That was his piece. Curious and strange. But he was past questioning orders from

the Wolf. Besides, he wanted to see his progeny. Daddy had been away for far too long.

He had a part to play, another mission, another piece of the puzzle. The

brat pack lived with his deceased wife's sister in a small house near Hyde Park. He remembered the house as he pulled

up in a rented Jaguar S type. He had a most unpleasant memory of his wife now, Lucy Rhys-Cousins, a brittle, small-minded woman. He'd murdered her in a Safeway in Chelsea, right in front of the twins. That truly merciful act had orphaned his twin daughters, Tricia and Erica, who were six or seven now, and Robert, who must be fifteen. Shafer believed they were far better off without their whining, sniveling mother.

He knocked on the front door of the house and found that it was unlocked, so

house and found that it was unlocked, so he barged in unannounced. He discovered his wife's younger

sister, Judi, playing with the twins on the living-room floor, bent over a game of Monopoly, which he believed they were all capable of losing —not a winner in the group.

"Daddy's home!" he exclaimed, and beamed a smile that was perfectly horrible. He then pointed a Beretta at dear Aunt Judi's chest.

"Don't make a sound, Judi, not a one. Don't give me the slightest excuse to pull this trigger. It would be so easy, and such a great pleasure. And yes, I sincerely hate you, too. You remind me of a fat version of your beloved sister. "Hello, children! Say hello to your

dear old dad. I've come a long ways to see you. All the way from America."

His twin girls his sweet daughters

His twin girls, his sweet daughters, started to cry, so Shafer did the only thing he could think of to restore order: he pointed his gun straight at Judi's tear-

stained face and walked closer to her.

"Make them stop whining and screeching. Now! Show me you deserve to be their keeper."

The aunt bent low and pressed the girls to her chest, and while they didn't actually stop crying, the sound was at

least muffled and subdued.
"Judi, now listen to me," Shafer said

head. "As much as I would like to, I'm not here to fuck and murder you. Actually, I have a message for you to be passed on to the home secretary. In a strange, ironic twist, your absurd, pitiful life actually matters for now. Can you believe it? I can't."

Aunt Judi seemed confused, her

as he moved behind her and pressed the barrel of the Beretta to the back of her

natural state as far as Shafer could tell. "How would I do that?" she blubbered.

"Just call the sodding police! Now shut up and listen. You're to tell the police that I came to visit, and I told you that no one is safe anymore. Not the police, not their families. We can go to their houses, just like I came to your

house today."

Just to make sure she got it, Shafer

hated those silly, frilly porcelain doodads that had once belonged to his wife and that she had doted on as if they were real.

"How is Robert?" he asked the twins, and received no reaction.

What is this? The girls had already

mastered the hopelessly lost and confused look of their mother and their blubbering auntie. They said not a word.

"Robert is your brother!" Shafer

repeated the message twice more. Then he turned his attention back to Tricia and Erica, who interested him about as much as the ridiculous porcelain dolls covering the mantel in the room. He me something about your brother! Has he grown two heads? Anything!"

"He's all right," Tricia finally simpered.

"Yes, he's all right," Erica repeated, following her sister's lead.

"He's all right, is he? Well, that's all right, then," Shafer said with utter

yelled, and the girls started to sob loudly again. "How is he? How is my son? Tell

disdain for these two clones of their mother.

He found that he was actually missing Robert, though. He rather

enjoyed the mildly twisted lad at times. "All right, give your father a kiss," he finally demanded. "I am your father, you pitiful twits," he added for good

The girls wouldn't kiss him, and he wasn't permitted to kill them, so Shafer finally had to leave the dreadful house.

measure. "In case you've forgotten."

On the way out, he swept the porcelain dolls off the mantel, sending them crashing to the floor.

"In memory of your mother!" he

called back over his shoulder.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 59

The most common complaint from soldiers serving in Iraq is that they feel that everything around them is absurd and makes no sense. More and more, this is the way of modern-day warfare. I felt it now myself.

We were past the deadline and living on borrowed time. That's how it seemed to me. Feeling as if I hadn't been able to catch my breath in days, I was on my way to London with two agents from our International Terrorism Section.

Geoffrey Shafer was in England. Even more insane, he wanted us to know he was there. Someone did.

The flight into Heathrow Airport

to New Scotland Yard, just around the corner, on Broadway. It was great to be so near Buckingham Palace, Westminster Abbey, and the Houses of Parliament.

Upon arrival, I was taken to the office of Detective Superintendent

Martin Lodge of the Met. Lodge told me, modestly enough, that he kept the Anti Terrorist Branch, called SO13, running smoothly. On our way to the morning's

arrived at a little before six in the morning and I went straight to a hotel just off Victoria Street and slept until ten. After that short rest, I made my way

briefing he gave me a thumbnail sketch of himself. "Like you, I came up through the that I trained at Hendon, then a constable on the beat. Chose the detective track and was moved into SO13 because I have a few languages."

police ranks. Eleven years with the Met after a stint with SIS in Europe. Before

He paused, and I spoke at the first break. "I know about your AT squad the best in Europe, I've heard. Years of practice with the IRA." Lodge gave me a thin smile, a

veteran trouper's smile. "Sometimes the best way to learn is through mistakes. We've made plenty in Ireland. Anyway, here we are, Alex. They're all waiting inside. They want to meet you very much. Get ready for some incredible bullshit, though. MI5 and MI6 will both

Don't let it get to you. We manage to sort it all out in the end. Most of the time, anyway." I nodded. "Like the Bureau and the

be here. They fight over everything.

CIA back home. I'm sure I've seen it before."

As it turned out, Detective Superintendent Lodge was right on about the turf wars, and I figured that the feud

was probably hurting progress in London, even under the present crisis circumstances. Also in the room were a few Special Branch men and women.

The prime minister's chief of staff. Plus emergency services.

the usual crowd from London's

As I took a seat I groaned inside—

another goddamn meeting. Just what I didn't need. We're past the deadline—they're blowing up things! I wanted to yell.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 60

The large beach house outside Montauk on Long Island didn't belong to the Wolf. It was a rental, forty thousand a week, even in the off-season. A complete rip-off, the Wolf knew, but he didn't mind so much. Not today, anyway. It was quite an impressive place,

though—Georgian style, three stories rising above the beach, immense swimming pool shielded from the wind by the house itself, pebbled driveway lined with cars—mostly limousines, muscular drivers in dark suits congregating around them.

Everything here, he thought with some bitterness, paid for with my

money, my sweat, my ideas!

They were waiting for him, several of his associates in the Red Mafiva.

They were gathered inside a library/sitting room with panoramic views of the deserted beach and the Atlantic.

They pretended to be his dearest,

closest friends as he entered the room, shaking his hand, patting his broad back and shoulders, muttering easy lies about how good it was to see him. The very few who know what I look like. The inner circle, the ones I trust more than anyone else.

Lunch had been served before he arrived, and then the entire household staff had been removed from the house.

He had parked in back, then come in through the kitchen. No one had seen him except the men in this room, nine of them.

He stood before them and lit up a

cigar. To victory.

"They have asked for an extension of

"They have asked for an extension of the deadline. Can you believe it?" the Wolf said between satisfying puffs.

The Russian men around the table

began to laugh. They shared the Wolf's disdain for the current governments and leaders around the world. Politicians were weak by nature and the few strong ones who snuck into office somehow were soon weakened by the process of government. It had always been that way.

"Drop the hammer!" one of the men shouted. The Wolf smiled. "You know, I

should. But they have a point—if we act now, we lose, too. Let me get them on the line. They're expecting an answer.

This is interesting, no? We negotiate with the United States, Britain, and Germany. As if we were a world power."

The Wolf raised his index finger as the call went through. "They're expecting to hear from me. . . ."

"You're all on the line?" he spoke into the phone.

They were.

"No small talk, the time for that has passed. Here is my decision. You have

"The price has just doubled!"

He disconnected. Then he looked around at his people.

another two days, till seven o'clock,

eastern standard time, but . . .

"What? You approve, or what? Do you know how much money I just made for you?"

They all began to clap, then cheer.

The Wolf stayed with them for the

remainder of the afternoon. He endured their false compliments, their requests thinly disguised as suggestions. But then he had other business in New York City, so he left them to enjoy the house by the sea, and whatever.

"The ladies will arrive soon," he promised. "Models and beauty queens

On my money, my sweat, my brilliance.

He was back in the Lotus then,

from New York. They say the most

Expressway. He was squeezing the black rubber ball, but finally he set it down. He took out his cell phone again.

heading toward the Long Island

Pressed a few numbers. A code was transmitted. A circuit closed. A primer fired.

Even from that far away, he heard

the beach house explode. He didn't need them anymore; he didn't need anyone. Zamochit! The bombs had broken

Zamochit! The bombs had broken every bone in all of their worthless, useless bodies.

Payback, revenge.

It was a beautiful thing.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 61

We received word in London that the

deadline had been extended forty-eight hours, and the relief, though temporary, was still extraordinary for all of us. Within the hour, we got word of a bombing on Long Island—several Red Mafiya bosses reported dead. What did it mean? Had the Wolf struck again? At his own people?

There was nothing useful for me to do after the long round of meetings at Scotland Yard. About ten at night, I met with a friend from Interpol at a London restaurant, the Cinnamon Club, which was on the site of what had once been the Old Westminster Library on Great

Smith Street.

I was past being exhausted and, in

fact, had gotten my second wind. Besides, I always looked forward to spending time with Sandy Greenberg, who was probably the smartest police

officer I had ever worked with. Maybe she had a new idea about the Wolf. Or the Weasel. At any rate, no one knew the European underworld better than she did.

Sandy is Sondra to all but her closest friends, and I am fortunate enough to be one of them. She's tall, attractive, chic, a little gawky, witty, and very funny. She gave me a big hug and kisses on both cheeks.

"Is this the only way I get to see you,

"You could always come to Washington to see me," I said as we pulled apart. "You look absolutely great, by the way."

"I do, don't I?" said Sandy. "Come, we have a table in the back. I've missed you terribly. God, it's good to see you.

You look wonderful yourself, even with

Alex? Some kind of terrifying international emergency? Where's the

all of this going on. How do you do it?"

The dinner was a fusion of Indian and European that couldn't be found in the States, at least not anywhere around Washington. Sandy and I talked for well over an hour about the case. But over coffee we lightened up and let things get

"Beautiful," I told her. "From Katherine," she said, and smiled. Sandy and Katherine Grant had been living together for about ten years and were one of the happiest couples I

had ever met. Lessons to be learned, but who can ever figure it all out? Not me. I

a little more personal. I noticed a gold signet ring and a trinity band she wore

couldn't even master my own life. "I see you're still not married," she said.

"You noticed."

on her pinkie finger.

know. Investigator par excellence. So tell me everything, Alex."

Sandy smirked. "Detective, you

"Not a lot to tell," I said, and found

my choice of words interesting. "I'm seeing someone I like a lot —"

Sandy interrupted. "Oh, hell, you

like everyone a lot. That's the way you are, Alex. You even liked Kyle Craig. Found some good in the creepy, psychopathic bastard."

speaking. But I'm over Kyle. And I don't like anything about Colonel Geoffrey

"You could be right, generally

Shafer. Or the Russian who calls himself the Wolf."

"I am right, dear boy. So who is this incredible woman you like a lot and whose heart you'll break, or she'll break yours—one or the other, I'm certain of it

already. Why do you keep torturing

yourself?"

I grinned, couldn't help it. "Another detective—well, actually, her title is inspector. She lives in San Francisco." "How convenient. That's brilliant,

Alex. What is it, two thousand miles from Washington? So you have a date, what, every other month?"

I laughed again. "I see your tongue is as sharp as ever."

"Practice, practice. So you still haven't found the right woman. Pity. A

real shame. I have a couple of friends. Well, hell, let's not even go there. Let me ask you a personal question, though. Do

you think you're truly over Maria?"

The thing about Sandy, as an investigator, is that she has thoughts that others don't; she explores areas that are

murdered over ten years ago in a driveby shooting. I'd never been able to solve it—and maybe I wasn't over Maria. Maybe, just maybe, I couldn't find closure until I solved her murder. The

often ignored. My wife, Maria, had been

case was still open. That thought had been tugging at me for years and still caused some pain whenever it entered my head.

"I am totally smitten with Jamilla Hughes," I said. "That's all I know for now. We enjoy each other. Why is that a bad thing?"

Sandy smiled. "I heard you the first time, Alex. You like her a lot. But you haven't told me that you're madly in love, and you're not the kind of person who right. I'm always right." "I love you," I said. Sandy laughed. "Well, then, it's settled. You're staying at my place tonight." "All right. Fine," I agreed.

settles for smitten. Right? Of course I'm

We both laughed, but half an hour later Sandy dropped me at my hotel off Victoria Street "You think of anything?" I said as I climbed out of the taxi.

"I'm on it," said Sandy, and I knew she was as good as her word, and I needed all the help I could possibly get in Europe.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 62

Henry Seymour lived not too far from the Weasel's hideout on Edgware Road in the area between Marble Arch and Paddington that is sometimes known as Little Lebanon. Colonel Shafer walked to the former SAS member's flat that morning, and as he trudged along, he wondered what had happened to the city, his city, and to his bloody country as well. What a dismal scene.

The streets were filled with Middle Eastern coffee shops and restaurants and grocers. The aromas of ethnic cuisines were thick in the air that morning by eight—tabbouleh, lentil soup, b'steeya. In front of a paper store two elderly men

third floor. He knocked once and Seymour opened up for him.

As soon as he saw Henry, though, Shafer was concerned. The man had lost thirty or forty pounds since he'd seen him

last, and that was only a few months ago. His full head of curly black hair was almost gone, replaced by a few scraggly

located above a men's clothing shop, and the Weasel went straightaway to the

smoked tobacco through a water-filtered hookah. Bloody hell! What the fuck has

Henry Seymour's apartment was

happened to my country?

Indeed, it was a struggle for Shafer to connect this man with his former army mate, one of the best demolition experts

tufts of gray and white frizz.

by side in Desert Storm and then again as mercenaries in Sierra Leone. In Desert Storm, Shafer and Seymour had been part of the Twenty-second SAS Regiment mobility troop. Mobility's primary mission was to go behind enemy lines and cause havoc. Nobody was

he'd ever seen. The two had fought side

Poor Henry didn't look capable of causing too much havoc now, but looks could be deceiving. Hopefully, anyway.

"So, are you ready for a job, an important mission?" Shafer asked.

Henry Seymour smiled, and he was

Henry Seymour smiled, and he was missing a couple of front teeth. "Suicide, I hope" he said

I hope," he said.
"As a matter of fact," said the

He sat down across from Henry and gave him his piece, and his old friend

Weasel, "that's rather a nice idea."

actually applauded once he'd heard the plan.

"I've always wanted to blow up

"I've always wanted to blow up London," he said. "I'm just the man for the job."

the job."
"I know," said the Weasel.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 63

Dr. Stanley S. Bergen of Scotland Yard addressed several hundred of us in a conference room that was filled to the rafters with police and other government officials. Dr. Bergen was a little over five feet and had to be close to two hundred pounds, and at least sixty years of age. But he was still a commanding presence.

He spoke without notes, and not once during his talk did any of us look away. We were definitely operating on borrowed time, and everyone in the room knew it all too well.

"We are at a critical point where we have to implement our contingency plans

confidence in them. You should, too.

"All right, this is how we will respond in London. If we have any warning that a disaster is coming, it will be required that all broadcasters turn over their airtime to us. Text-messaging alerts to mobile phones and pagers will also be available. Other less-effective methods include loud-hailers, mobile

for London," Dr. Bergen said.
"Responsibility is under the London
Resilience Forum. I have every

public address, et cetera.

"Suffice it to say that the people will know if we know ahead of time that an attack is coming. The Met's police commissioner or the home secretary will go on TV with the message.

clear exactly what has happened, the affected area will be isolated as best we can. The fire brigade and police will then define three zones at the scene—hot, warm, and cold.

"Those in the hot zone—if they are alive—will be kept there until they are decontaminated, if that is possible.

"Fire and ambulance services will

"If there is a bomb or a chemical

attack, the police and fire services will set up immediately in the area. Once it is

"The cold zone will be used for investigation, command-and-control vehicles, and also for loading ambulances."

be set up in the warm zone. So will

decontamination shower units.

a possibility, not unless we begin now, and the repugnant and villainous Wolf has promised to strike immediately, should we do so."

Maps and other emergency materials were then distributed around the room. It seemed to me that the mood was as low

As I sat there looking at the

paperwork, Martin Lodge came up to

as it could possibly go.

Dr. Bergen stopped talking and looked out at us. His face was set in a worried look but also revealed the compassion he was feeling for his city and its people. "Some of you may have noticed that I have not actually made mention of the word 'evacuation.' This is because the evacuation of London is not

said in a whisper. "You'll appreciate this. He says he likes our plan very much. And he agrees, it's hopeless to try and evacuate London—"

Suddenly there was a terrible explosion in the building.

me. "We got a call from the Wolf," he

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 64

When I finally made it downstairs to the site of the bombing, I was stunned by the unbelievable scene of chaos and confusion. The world-famous Scotland Yard sign in front had been completely blown away. There was rubble and a smoking hole where the Broadway road entrance had been. The remains of a black van were embedded in the sidewalk outside.

A decision had already been made not to abandon the building, to hold our ground. I thought that was smart, or at least courageous. A couple of dozen men and women were already viewing a videotape in semidarkness when I arrived at the crisis center. One of them was Martin Lodge.

I took a seat in back and began to watch. I looked down, and my hands were trembling.

The film segment showed Broadway

that morning, the usual armed policemen on duty outside the huge, imposing building. A black van appeared, driven at reckless speed the wrong way down Caxton Street opposite the main entrance to Scotland Yard. It roared straight across Broadway and crashed into the barrier erected at the entrance. Almost instantly there was a fiery explosion. It

building was illuminated.

I heard someone speak from near the

was silent on the film. The whole

terrorist, and obviously single-minded. He wants us to know that we are vulnerable. I think we've got the message

front of the room. Martin Lodge had taken the floor. "Our enemy is truly a

by now, don't you? It's interesting that no one was killed this morning, other than the driver of the vehicle. Maybe the Wolf has a heart after all."

A voice came from the back of the room. "He doesn't have a heart. He just has a plan." The voice, which I almost didn't recognize, was my own.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 65

I worked at Scotland Yard for the rest of the day and slept on a cot there that night.

I awoke at three in the morning and went right back to work. The second deadline would run out at midnight. No one could begin to imagine what would happen then.

At seven that morning I was in cramped quarters, inside an unmarked police van headed to an estate in Feltham, out near Heathrow Airport. I rode with Martin Lodge and three of his detectives from the Met. We had recently been granted special permission to carry guns on this assignment. That

was better.

Lodge explained the situation during

at all?"

launcher on the rooftop of a private home. We have surveillance there now. We don't want to go in, for obvious reasons, made only too clear yesterday. He's bound to be watching the neighborhood. I wouldn't doubt it for a minute."

One of the other detectives asked,

"Do we have an idea who it is inside the house, sir? Have we sussed out anything

the ride. "Our men, along with Special Branch, are all over Heathrow and the surrounding areas. We're working with the airport police, too. One of our people spotted a suspect with a missile

"The house is rented. It belongs to a property developer. Pakistani, if that means anything. We don't know who the tenants are yet. The house is a few hundred yards from the runways at Heathrow. Need I say more?"

I looked over at Lodge, who had his arms wrapped tightly around his chest. "Very nasty stuff," he said. "Understatement of the year, right, Alex?"

"I've had that feeling for a while. Ever since I first encountered the Wolf.

He enjoys hurting people."
"You have no idea who he is, Alex?

What makes him this way?"

"He seems to change his identity on

"He seems to change his identity on a regular basis. He . . . or she? We got close a couple of times. Maybe we'll get lucky now."

"It better happen soon."

We arrived at our destination in

met up with SO19, British Specialist Operations, who would execute the raid. Police surveillance had video monitors set up inside several nearby buildings.

Feltham a few minutes later. Lodge and I

Tape was being shot from half a dozen different cameras.

"Like watching a movie. Nothing we

can do to influence the action," Lodge said after we'd studied the videos for a few minutes. What an impossible mess. We weren't supposed to be there. We'd

We weren't supposed to be there. We'd been warned against it. But how could we go away?

were from Eindhoven, three from Edinburgh, two from Aberdeen, then a British Airways flight from New York. Serious discussions were being held about halting all flights into both Heathrow and Gatwick, but no decision had yet been made. The jet from New York was due in nineteen minutes.

Lodge had a list of all the flights

scheduled into Heathrow that morning. In the next hour or so, more than thirty flights would be arriving. The next few

Two monitors showed the rooftop from opposite angles. A man in dark clothing had appeared. Then a second

"There's someone on the roof!

One of the police pointed.

There! There he is!"

man, this one carrying a small surfaceto-air missile launcher, came out of a hatchway.

"Fucking hell," somebody hissed. Tempers were running very high now. Mine, too.

"Reroute all the flights now! We have no choice," Lodge barked. "Do our snipers have these two bastards covered?"

Word came back that SO19 had the

rooftop covered. Meanwhile, we watched the two men get into position. There could be little doubt now that they were there to bring down a plane. And we were watching the frightening scene,

without being able to stop it.
"Arseholes!" Lodge swore at the

monitors. "Not going to be anything for you bastards to shoot at. How do you like that?"

"They look Middle Eastern to me,"

said one of the other detectives. "They certainly don't look Russian!"

"We don't have the go-ahead to

shoot," a man wearing headphones announced. "We're still on hold." "What the bloody hell is going on?"

Lodge complained in a high-pitched voice. "We have to take them out. Come on!"

Suddenly there were gunshots! We could hear them on the video. The man with the launcher on his shoulder went down. He didn't get up, didn't move at all. Then the second suspect was hit.

"What the hell?" someone shouted in the van where we were watching. Then

everyone was cursing and yelling. "Who gave the order to shoot?

What's going on here?" screamed Lodge. Word finally came back, but nobody

could believe it. Our snipers hadn't made the hit. Somebody else had shot the two men on the roof. Madness.

It was total madness.

Two clean head shots.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 66

Everything was a wild ride like

nothing anyone could imagine, like nothing anyone ever had imagined. The latest deadline was hours away and nobody in the rank and file knew what was happening. Maybe the prime minister knew something? The president? The chancellor of Germany? Every passing hour just rubbed it in for us. Then it was the passing minutes

that hurt. There was nothing we could do, except pray that the ransom would be paid. Soldiers in Iraq, I kept thinking to myself. That's what we are like. Observers of absurdity.

Back in London, at one point in the

around Parliament Square, with few tourists and pedestrians. The people of London didn't know what was happening, but whatever it was, it wasn't good.

several times. Nobody answered. Had Nana moved? Then I talked to the kids at their aunt Tia's in Maryland. No one

I called my house in Washington

late afternoon I took a brief walk down near Westminster Abbey. There was so much powerful history on display in this part of the city. The streets weren't deserted, but traffic was very light

knew where Nana Mama was. Another thing to worry about—just what I needed.

There really was nothing to do but

made, but the rumor was that none of the ransoms would be paid. In the end, the governments weren't willing to negotiate, were they? They couldn't give in to terrorists, not without a fight. Was that what came next? The fight?

Once again the deadline passed, and I felt as if we were playing Russian

There were no attacks in London,

New York, Washington, or Frankfurt that night. The Wolf didn't retaliate right

away. He just let us stew.

roulette.

wait; the waiting was frustrating and nerve-racking. Still, no one had a clue what was going on. And not just in London—in New York, Washington, and Frankfurt. No announcement had been

and then, finally, to Nana. Nothing had happened in D.C. so far. Nana had gone for a walk in the neighborhood with Kayla, she told me. Everything was fine

there. Walk in the park, right, Nana?

I talked to the kids at my aunt's house

Finally, at 5:00A.M. in London most of us went home to get some needed rest, if we could sleep.

I dozed for a few hours, then the phone rang. Martin Lodge was on the line.

"What's happened?" I asked as I sat upright in my hotel bed. "What has he done?"

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 67

"Nothing's happened, Alex. Calm down. I'm downstairs in the hotel lobby. Nothing's happened. Maybe he was bluffing. Let's hope so. Get dressed and come for breakfast at my house. I want you to meet my family. My wife wants to meet you. You need a break, Alex. We all do."

How could I say no? After all that we'd been through in the past few days? Half an hour later, I was in Martin's Volvo headed out to Battersea, just over the river from Westminster. Along the way, Martin tried to prepare me for breakfast, and for his family. We both wore our beepers, but neither of us

wanted to talk about the Wolf or his threats. Not for an hour or so, anyway.

"The wife is Czech—Klára Cernohosska, born in Prague, but she's a

real Brit now. Listens to Virgin and XFM, and all the talk shows on BBC Radio. She insisted on a Czech breakfast

this morning, though. She's showing off for you. You'll love it. I hope so. No, I think you will, Alex."

I thought so, too. Martin was actually smiling as he drove and talked about his

family. "The eldest of my brood is Hana. Guess who chooses the names in our

family? Hint: the kids are Hana, Daniela, and Jozef. What's in a name, though? Hana is obsessed with Trinny and Susannah on the TV show What Not to

Joe is mad about football, skateboarding and PlayStation. That just about covers it, don't you think? Did I mention that we're eating Czech for breakfast?"

A few minutes later we arrived in Battersea. The Lodge house was a Victorian redbrick with a slate roof and

largish garden. Very neat and nice, proper, appropriate for the neighborhood. The garden was colorful

Wear. She's fourteen, Alex. The middle child, Dany, plays hockey at Battersea Park—and she's also crazy about ballet.

and well tended and showed that somebody had his priorities in order.

The whole family was waiting in the dining room, where the food was just being laid out. I was formally introduced

Tigger, and I immediately felt pretty much at home, as well as missing my own family, feeling a sharp pang that stayed with me for a while.

Martin's wife Klére identified the

to everyone, including a cat named

stayed with me for a while.

Martin's wife, Klára, identified the food as it was laid out on the sideboard.
"Alex, these are koláce, pastries with a cream cheese center. Rohlíky —rolls.

Párek, two kinds of sausage, very good, a specialty of the house."

She looked at the eldest daughter, Hana, who was a neat blend of her

Turka, which is Turkish-style coffee.

but with Martin's hooked nose. "Hana?" Hana grinned at me. "What kind of eggs would you like, sir? You can have

mother and dad. Tall, slim, a pretty face

Smazená vejce, if you like. Omeleta?"

I shrugged, then said, "Míchaná veice."

vejce na mekko. Or míchaná vejce.

"Excellent choice," said Klára. "Perfect pronunciation. Our guest is a born linguist."

"Good. Now what is it?" I asked. "The food I ordered?"

Hana giggled. "Just scrambled eggs. Perfect with the rohlíky and párek."

"Yes, the rolls and sausage," I said, and the girls clapped for my show-off performance.

It went that way for the next hour or so, most pleasantly, with Klára asking a lot of informal questions about my life in America while telling me about the craziness of your country much like Günter Grass did with Germany in The Tin Drum. You should read it, Alex."

"I live it," I told Klára.

It was only at the end of the meal that the kids admitted that the names for the breakfast foods were just about the only

Czech words they knew. Then they began to clear away the food and started

in on the dishes.

American mystery novels she enjoyed, as well as the latest Booker Prize winner Vernon God Little, which she said "is very funny, and captures the

"Oh, and there's ty vejce jsou hnusný," said Jozef, or Joe, the eightyear-old.
"I'm almost afraid to ask—what does that mean?"

"Oh, that the eggs were gross," said Joe, who laughed with little-boy delight at his joke.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 68

There was nothing to do once I left Martin and Klára's, except obsess and worry about the Wolf and where he might strike, if he was going to retaliate. Back at the hotel, I caught a few more hours of sleep, then I decided to walk and I felt that this might be a long walk. I needed it.

Something strange, though. I was strolling along Broadway and I had the feeling that somebody was following me. I didn't think I was being paranoid. I tried to see who it was, but either he was very good or I wasn't that skilled at spy games. Maybe if this had been Washington instead of London. But it

was difficult for me to spot who or what was out of place here—except me, of course.

I stopped in at Scotland Yard and

there was still no word from the Wolf. And so far, no reprisals. Not in any of the targeted cities. The calm before the storm?

An hour or so later, having walked

up Whitehall, past No. 10 Downing Street to Trafalgar Square and back, and feeling much better for the exercise, I made my way to the hotel and had that same creepy feeling again—as if someone was watching me, following.

Who? I didn't actually see anyone.

Back in my room, I called the kids at
Aunt Tia's. Then I talked to Nana, who

peaceful," she joked. "But I wouldn't mind a full house again. I miss everybody."

"So do I, Nana."

was on Fifth Street by herself. "Oddly

I fell off to sleep again, in my

clothes, and didn't wake until the phone rang. I hadn't bothered to pull the drapes and it was dark outside. I looked at the clock—Jesus—four in the morning. I guess I was finally catching up on some of the sleep I'd lost.

"Alex Cross," I said into the phone.

"It's Martin, Alex. I'm on my way from home. He wants us to go to the Houses of Parliament, to meet him on the sidewalk outside the Strangers' Entrance. Shall I pick you up?" "No. It's faster if I walk. I'll meet you there." Parliament at this time of the morning? It didn't sound good. Maybe five minutes later I was back

outside again, hurrying along Victoria

Street, heading toward Westminster Abbey. I was certain that the Wolf was going to pull something and that it would hurt like hell. Did that mean all four cities were about to be hit? That wouldn't surprise me. Nothing would at this point.

"Hello, Alex. Fancy meeting you here."

A man stepped out of the shadows. I

hadn't even noticed him standing there. Preoccupied, maybe only half awake, a little careless. pointed at my heart.

"I'm supposed to be out of the country by now. But I had this one thing I had to do. Kill you. I wanted you to see

shadows and I saw his gun. It was

He stepped all the way out of the

had to do. Kill you. I wanted you to see it coming, too. Just like this. I've had dreams about this moment. Maybe you have, too."

The speaker was Geoffrey Shafer.

He was so cocky and confident, and he clearly had the upper hand. Maybe that's why I didn't even think about what I should do, and I didn't hesitate. I barreled into Shafer, waited for the thundering gunshot to follow.

It came, too. Only he didn't hit me, at least I didn't think so. I suspected the

matter. I blocked Shafer hard into the building behind him. I saw surprise and pain in his eyes, and that was the motivation I needed. Also his gun had gone flying in the scuffle.

shot was deflected to the side. Didn't

I hit him hard with a roundhouse into his midsection, probably below the belt, maybe a nut cruncher. I hoped so. He grunted and I knew I'd hurt him. But I wanted to hurt Shafer more, for all kinds of reasons. I wanted to kill him right there in the street. I crunched another shot to his stomach and I could feel it go weak under my fist. Then I went for the

shot to his stomach and I could feel it go weak under my fist. Then I went for the bastard's head. I slammed a hard right hand into his temple. Then a left to his jaw. He was hurt badly, but he wouldn't

go down.

"That all you got, Cross? Here's something for you," he snarled.

He had a switchblade and I started to

step away—but then I realized that he was hurt and that this was my best chance. I hit Shafer again, on his nose. Broke it! He still wouldn't go down and

he swiped out viciously with the knife. He sliced my arm, and I realized how crazy I was, how lucky not to be hurt, or killed.

I had a chance to reach for my own gun and I pulled it out of the holster on the back of my belt.

Shafer charged at me, and I'm not sure if he saw the gun. Maybe he thought I wouldn't be armed in London.

to say. I fired point-blank into his chest. He

"No!" I yelled. It was all I had time

fell back against the wall and slowly slid to the ground. His face was nothing but shock, as

maybe he realized that he was mortal after all. "Fucker, Cross," he muttered. "Bastard."

I bent down over him. "Who is the Wolf? Where is he?"

"Go to hell," he said, and then he died, and went there instead.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 69

London Bridge is falling down, Falling down, falling down.

Minutes after the Weasel died on the streets of London, his old army mate, Henry Seymour, drove an eleven-year-old white van through the night—and he was thinking that he had no fear of death. None at all. He welcomed it, actually.

At a little past 4:30, traffic was

already heavy on the Westminster Bridge. Seymour parked as close to it as he could, then walked back and rested his arms on the parapet, looking west. He loved the sight of Big Ben and the Houses of Parliament from the grand old bridge, always had, ever since he was a

raised.

He was noticing everything this morning. On the opposite bank of the Thames he saw the London Eye, which he thoroughly despised. The Thames

small boy visiting London on day trips from Manchester, where he'd been

was as dark as the early-morning sky. The smell in the air was slightly salty and fishy. Rows of plum-colored tourist buses sat idle near the bridge, waiting for the day's first passengers to arrive in just an hour or so.

Isn't going to happen, though. Not on this day of days. Not if old Henry has his way this morning.

Wordsworth had written of the view from Westminster Bridge (he thought it was Wordsworth): "Earth has not anything to show more fair." Henry Seymour always remembered that one, though he wasn't much for poets, or what they had to say.

Write a poem about this shit.

Somebody write a poem about me. The bridge and poor Henry Seymour and all these other poor bastards out here with me this morning.

He went to fetch the van.

At 5:34 the bridge seemed to ignite

at its center. Actually, Henry Seymour's van was what blew up. The strip of roadway beneath it rose up and then split apart; the bridge's supports toppled; triple-globed lampposts flew into the air like uprooted flowers blowing in the

a moment everything was quiet, deathly quiet, as Seymour's spirit floated away. Then police sirens began to scream all over London.

fiercest wind anyone could imagine. For

And the Wolf called Scotland Yard to take credit for his handiwork. "Unlike you people, I keep my promises," he said. "I tried to build bridges between

said. "I tried to build bridges between us, but you keep tearing them down. Do you understand? Do you finally understand what I'm saying? "The

understand? Do you finally understand what I'm saying? "The London bridge is gone . . . and it's only the beginning. This is too good to end—I want it to go on and on."

Payback.

Part Four

PARIS, SCENE OF THE CRIME

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 70

The test track was a familiar one, located sixty kilometers south of Paris. The Wolf was there to drive a prototype race car, and he had some company for the ride.

Walking beside him was a former KGB man who had handled his business in France and Spain for many years. His name was Ilya Frolov, and Ilya knew the Wolf by sight. He was one of the few men still alive who did, which filled him with some dread that day, though he thought of himself as one of the Wolf's few friends.

"What a beauty!" the Wolf said as the men walked up beside a red "You love your cars," Ilya said.
"Always have."
"Growing up outside Moscow, I never thought I would own a car, any car. Now I own so many that I lose count sometimes. I want you to take a ride with

Porsche-powered prototype Fabcar. This very model had run in the Rolex

Sports Car Series.

me. Get in, my friend."

Ilya Frolov shook his head and raised both his hands in protest. "Not me. I don't like the noise, the speed, anything about it."

"I insist," said the Wolf. He raised

the gull wing on the passenger side first. "Go ahead, it won't bite you. You'll never forget the ride, Ilya."

Ilya forced a laugh, then started to cough. "That's what I'm afraid of."
"After we finish, I want to talk to

you about the next steps. We're very close to getting our money. They're weakening day by day, and I have a plan. You're going to be a rich man, Ilya."

The Wolf climbed into the driver's seat, which was on the right side. He flipped a switch, the dashboard lit up, and the car roared and shook. The Wolf watched Ilya's face go pale and laughed

Ilya Frolov.

"We're sitting right on the engine. It's going to get very hot in here now. Maybe a hundred and thirty degrees. That's why we wear a 'cool suit.' It's going to get

merrily. In his own strange way he loved

noisy, too. Put on your helmet, Ilya. Last warning."

And then they were off!

And then they were off!
The Wolf lived for this—the

exhilaration, the raw power of the world's finest race cars. At this speed he had to concentrate on the driving nothing else mattered, there was nothing else while he spun around the test track. Everything about the ride was about power: the noise, since there was no sound-dampening material inside; the vibration—the stiffer the suspension, the faster the car could change direction; the g-force, resulting in as much as six

turns.
God, what a glorious machine—so

hundred pounds of pressure on some

perfect—whoever made it was a genius.

There are still some of us in the world, he thought to himself. I should

know.

Finally he slowed and steered the highly temperamental car off the track. He climbed out, pulled off his helmet, shook out his hair, and shouted to the skies.

"That was so great! My God, what an experience. Better than sex! I've ridden women and cars—I prefer the race car!"

He looked over at Ilya Frolov and saw that the man was still pale and shaking a bit. Poor Ilya.

"I'm sorry, my friend," the Wolf spoke softly. "I'm afraid you don't have

know what happened in Paris."

He shot his friend dead on the test track. Then the Wolf just walked away.

the balls for the next ride. Besides, you

track. Then the Wolf just walked away, never looking back. He had no interest in the dead.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 71

That same afternoon the Wolf visited a farmhouse about fifty kilometers southeast of the test track. He was the first to arrive and settled in the kitchen, which he kept as dark as a crypt. Artur Nikitin had been ordered to come alone, and he did as he was told. Nikitin was former KGB and had always been a loyal soldier. He worked for Ilya Frolov, mostly as an arms dealer.

The Wolf heard Artur approaching on the back steps. "No lights," he called. "Just come inside."

Artur Nikitin opened the door and stepped inside. He was tall, with a thick white beard, a big Russian bear of a man, physically not unlike the Wolf himself.
"There's a chair. Sit. Please. You are my guest," said the Wolf.

Nikitin obeyed. He showed no fear. Actually, he had no fear of death.

"You have always done good work for me in the past. This will be our last job together. You'll make enough to walk away from the life, to do as you wish.

away from the life, to do as you wish. Does that sound all right?"

"It sounds very good. Whatever you wish, I do. It's the secret of my success."

"Paris is very special to me," the Wolf continued. "In another life, I lived

there for two years. And now, here I am again. It's no coincidence, Artur. I need your help here. More than that, I need

here, aren't I?"

"I plan to blow a big hole in Paris, cause lots more trouble, then get filthy rich. I can still depend on you?"

Nikitin found himself smiling. "Absolutely. I don't like the French anyway. Who does? It will be a

"Of course. Without a doubt. I'm

your loyalty. Can I depend on you?"

part."

The Wolf had found his man for the job. Now he gave him his piece of the puzzle.

pleasure. I especially like the 'filthy rich'

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 72

Two days after the bombing of Westminster Bridge, I traveled back to Washington. During the long flight, I forced myself to make extensive notes about what the Wolf might do next. What could he do? Would he strike again, keep on bombing cities until he got his money? And what was the significance of bridges to him?

Only one thing seemed obvious to me: the Wolf wasn't going to disappear and leave things as they had been before. He wasn't going away.

Even before my plane landed I got a message from Ron Burns's office. I was to go to headquarters as soon as I

But I didn't go to the Hoover Building; I went home instead. Like

Bartleby the Scrivener, I respectfully

arrived in Washington.

declined my employer's request. I didn't think twice about it. The Wolf would still be there in the morning.

The kids had come into the city with

their aunt Tia. Nana was there on Fifth Street, too. We spent the night together at our house, the one Nana had been born in. In the morning the kids would return to Maryland with Tia. Nana would stay on Fifth Street, and so would I. Maybe

wanted to admit.

About eleven that night, someone was at the front door. I had been playing

the two of us were more alike than I

only a few steps to the door. I opened up and saw Ron Burns standing there with a couple of his agents. He ordered his men to go wait by the car. Then he invited himself in.

the piano on the sunporch, and it was

"I need to talk to you. Everything has changed," the director said as he walked past me at the door.

And so I sat out on our small sunporch with the director of the FBI. I didn't play the piano for Burns; I just listened to what he had to say.

The first thing had to do with Thomas Weir. "We have no doubt that Tom had some connection with the Wolf back when he came out of Russia. He may have known who the Russian was. We're on it, Alex, and so is the CIA. But, of course, this puzzle refuses to unravel easily." "Everybody's cooperating with everybody else, though," I

said,

frowning. "How nice." Burns stared at me. "I know that this has been tough for you. I know the job isn't the perfect fit so far. You want to be

in the middle of the action. And you want to be with your family." I couldn't deny it, not any of what Burns had said. "Go ahead, Director. I'm

still listening." "Something happened in France, Alex. It involved Tom Weir and the Wolf. It happened a long time ago. A

mistake was made, a big one."

"What mistake?" I asked. Were we finally getting close to some answers? "You have to stop playing games with me. Do you wonder why I'm having

second thoughts about my job?"

"Believe me, we don't know what happened back then. We're getting closer

last few hours. The Wolf made contact again, Alex."

I sighed heavily, but I listened,

to an answer. A lot has happened in the

because I promised that I would.

"You said it before, that he wants to

"You said it before, that he wants to hurt us, to break our back if he can. He says that he can. He said that the rules are changing and that he's the one changing them. He's the only one with the answers to this puzzle. You're the

I had to stop Burns. "Ron, what are you trying to say? Just tell me. I'm either in this thing—all the way—or I'm all the

only one with a clue about him."

way out."

"He gave us ninety-six hours. Then he promised a doomsday scenario.

"He changed some of the target cities. It's still Washington and London, but also Tel Aviv and Paris. He won't

explain the change. He wants four billion dollars, and he wants the political prisoners released. He won't explain a goddamn thing to us."

"That's all?" I said. "Four doomed cities? A few billion in ransom? Free some murderers?"

Burns shook his head. "No, that's not

this time. There's going to be panic around the world. But especially in the four cities: London, Paris, Tel Aviv, and here in Washington. He's gone public."

all. He's given everything to the press

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 73

On Sunday morning, after breakfast with Nana, I left for Paris. Ron Burns wanted me in France. End of discussion.

Exhausted and probably depressed, I slept for a good part of the flight. Then I read a lot of CIA files about a KGB agent who had lived in Paris eleven years ago and might have worked with Thomas Weir. That agent supposedly was the Wolf. And something had happened. A "mistake." A big one, apparently.

I'm not sure what kind of reception I was expecting from the French, especially given the recent history between our countries, but things went

seemed to me that the command center in Paris worked better than the similar command centers I'd seen in London and Washington. The reason for this was clear immediately.

fairly smoothly once I arrived. In fact, it

The infrastructure in Paris was simpler, the organization much smaller. One official told me, "It's easy to share here, because the file you need is next door or right down the hall."

I received a quick briefing, then was

thrown into a high-level meeting. A general in the army looked at me and addressed me in English. "Dr. Cross, to be honest with you, we haven't ruled out the possibility that this violence is part of the jihad, that is to say, Islamic

terrorist attacks. Please believe me, they are clever enough to dream up something bizarre like this. They are duplicatous enough to have even dreamed up the Wolf. This would explain the demand to

I didn't say a word. How could I? Al

release the hostages, would it not?"

Behind the Wolf? That was what the French believed? That was why I was there?

"As you know, our two countries don't share the same perspective on the connection between the Islamic terror

networks and the current situation in the Middle East. We believe that the jihad isn't actually a war against Western values. It is a complex reaction against

Qaeda? Behind everything so far?

haven't adopted radical Islam."

"And yet the four main targets of radical Islam are the United States,

Israel, France, England," I spoke from

the leaders of Muslim nations who

my seat. "And the current targets of the so-called Wolf? Washington, Tel Aviv, Paris, London."

"Please keep an open mind on the

matter. In addition, you should know that former KGB officers were involved and very influential with Saddam Hussein in Iraq. As I say, keep an open mind."

I nodded. "I have an open mind. But I have to tell you, I've seen no evidence that Islamic terrorists are behind this threat. I've dealt with the Wolf before. Believe me, he doesn't embrace the



Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 74

That night I had dinner by myself in Paris. Actually, I walked around just to see the situation in the city firsthand. There were heavily armed French soldiers everywhere. Tanks and jeeps in the streets. Not too many people out walking. Worried looks on the faces of those who ventured out for whatever reason.

I ate at one of the few places open for business, Les Olivades on avenue de Ségur. The restaurant and clientele were extremely laid-back, which was what I needed, given the jet lag and confusion, not to mention the state of the siege in Paris.

After the meal I walked some more, thinking about the Wolf and also Thomas Weir. The Wolf murdered Weir on purpose, didn't he? He's targeted Paris for a reason, too. Why? What is his thing

with bridges? A possible clue for us? Are bridges symbolic for him? What is the symbolism?

It was sad and strange to walk around Paris, knowing that a deadly

attack could come at any time. I was there to find some way to stop it—but honestly, no one knew where to start; no one had turned up one clue as to the identity of the Wolf or where he might be staying, not even a country. The Wolf had lived there, eleven years ago.

Something bad had happened. What was

it?
That section of Paris was gorgeous, broad avenues and wide sidewalks

cutting a swath between the well-kept stone buildings. Wavering trails of a few

car lights streamed up and down the avenues. People leaving Paris? And then —when we would least expect it—boom! Kiss your ass good-bye.

The scary thing was that a really bad end seemed almost inevitable. And not just another bridge this time.

That's how well he had us set up. He was in full control—but we had to turn that around somehow.

When I got back to my hotel, I called the kids. It was six at night in Maryland; their aunt Tia would just be getting dinner ready, the kids complaining they were too busy to help. Jannie answered the phone, "Bonsoir, Monsieur Cross." Was she psychic?

Then Jannie launched into half a

me. In the meantime, Damon had picked up the extension. Both of them began to rattle off questions. I think they wanted to lessen the tension all of us were feeling.

Had I visited Notre Dame

dozen questions she'd been saving up for

Cathedral? Did I meet the Hunchback (ha, ha)? Did I see the famous gargoyles, like the one they remembered who was eating another one?

"I didn't have time to climb the

towers to the Gallery of Fabulous Beasts

today. I'm working here." I got in a couple of sentences. "We know that, Dad," Jannie said.

"We're just trying to keep everything light. We miss you," she whispered.

"Miss you, Dad," Damon said.

"Je t'aime," said Jannie. Minutes later I was alone in a

faraway hotel room, in a city under a death threat.

Je t'aime aussi.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 75

The clock was ticking . . . loudly. Or was that just my heart getting ready to explode?

Early the next morning it was arranged for me to have a partner. His name was Etienne Marteau, a detective with the French National Police. Marteau was a small and wiry man, cooperative and competent on the face of it. But I had the sense that he'd been assigned to watch me more than to work with me. That was so messed up, so counterproductive, it started to drive me crazy.

In the late afternoon I spoke to Ron Burns's office about going home. My Tony never even bothered to take it to the director. He reminded me that Thomas Weir and the Wolf had probably met in Paris.

request was denied. By Tony Woods!

"I didn't forget, Tony," I told him, and hung up.

So I began to wade through the

records and data that had been collected by the National Police. I looked for connections to Thomas Weir, or even the CIA. I was even trying to keep an open mind about Islamic terrorists, for God's sake!

Detective Marteau was slightly helpful, but the process was slow and the Frenchman needed frequent breaks for cigarettes and coffee. This wasn't feeling that whatever help I could bring to the situation was being wasted there. I was getting a really bad headache, too. About six o'clock we gathered in the

going anywhere, and again I had the

ticking! The Wolf would call again, I finally learned. The mood in the room was charged but clearly negative: we all knew we were being manipulated and insulted. I was sure the atmosphere was

crisis center. The goddamn clock was

Aviv.

Suddenly we heard his voice on the speakerphone. Heavily filtered.

the same in Washington, London, Tel

speakerphone. Heavily filtered. Familiar. Obscene.

"Sorry to keep everybody waiting," he said, and although he didn't laugh,

there was nothing but derision in his tone. I wanted to scream at the bastard.

"But then, of course, I have been kept

waiting, haven't I? I know, I know, it's because the precedent is unacceptable to all the governments, the loss of face. I understand. I get it.

"And now, I need you to understand something, too. This deadline is the final one. I will even make a concession. If it makes you feel better, go ahead and try to find me. Bring your investigations out into the open. Catch me if you can.

"But know this, and know it well, you bastards. This time, the money must be paid on time. All of it. The prisoners of war must be released. All of them.

The deadline will not be extended, and

it, even by minutes, there will be tens of thousands of murders in each of the four cities. You heard me right—I said murders. Believe me, I will push the button. I will kill in a way the world has rarely seen. Especially in Paris. Au

revoir, mes amis."

believe me, it is a dead line. If you miss

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 76

Later that night Etienne Marteau and I thought we might have stumbled onto something useful and maybe even important. At that point every clue was being looked at as vital.

The French National Police had

intercepted several messages dialed on the phone of a known arms dealer working out of Marseilles. The dealer specialized in hardware from the Red Army, contraband that was floating all over Europe, especially in Germany, France, and Italy. In the past, he'd sold contraband to radical Islamic groups.

Marteau and I read and re-read the transcript of a phone conversation

police had broken most of it down:

ARMS DEALER: Cousin, how is your business these days? [Are you ready to do the job?] Are you coming to

between the arms dealer and a suspected terrorist with ties to al Qaeda. The conversation was coded, but the French

TERRORIST:Oh, you know, I have a wife and too many children. These things are sometimes complicated. [He has a large team]

see me soon? [Can you travel?]

large team.]

ARMS DEALER:For God's sake, I have told you before—bring your woman and the children with you. You should come right now. [Bring your whole team now.]

TERRORIST:We are all very tired.

[We are being watched.]

ARMS DEALER:Everyone is tired.
But you will love it here. [It's safe for you.] I guarantee it.

TERRORIST:All right, then. I will

start loading up my family.

ARMS DEALER:I have my stamp collection ready for you. [Probably

special tactical weapons.]

"What does he mean, 'my stamp collection'?" I asked. "That's a key phrase, isn't it?"

"They're not sure, Alex. They believe it's weapons. What kind—who knows for certain? Something serious."

"Will they stop the terrorist team now? Or let them into France and watch them?"

"I think the plan is to let them come in and hope they lead us to others. Higher-ups. Everything is moving

quickly and very loosey-goosey now."

"Maybe a little too loosey-goosey," I said.

"We do things differently. Please try to respect that, to understand it if you can."

I nodded. "Etienne, I don't think there will be any contact with higher-ups on the ground here. That isn't how the Wolf works. Every player has a part to play, but no clue about the larger plan."

The detective looked me in the eye. "I'll pass that on," he said.

But I doubted very much that he would. An idea struck me, and it was

hard to handle. I am all alone over here, aren't I? I am the Ugly American.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 77

I finally went back to the Relais at two in the morning. I was up again at 6:30. No rest for the righteous, or the ridiculous. But the Wolf didn't want us rested, did he? He wanted us stressed and afraid and capable of making mistakes.

I walked to the Préfecture de Police, obsessing about the twisted mind behind all of this. Why was he twisted? The Wolf had supposedly been a KGB agent before he came to America, where he became a powerful force in the Red Mafiya. He'd spent time in England and here in France. He was clever enough that we still didn't know his identity, not

even a name, and we definitely didn't have a complete history for him.

He thought big. But why would he align himself with Islamic terrorist

groups? Unless he'd been involved with al Qaeda from the start? Was that really a possibility? If so, it scared the hell out of me. Because it was so incredibly

unthinkable, so preposterous in a way. But so much that was happening in the world seemed preposterous these days.

Out of the corner of my eye—a flash!

Out of the corner of my eye—a flash! Suddenly I was aware of a silver and black motorcycle coming at me on the sidewalk! My heart clutched and I jumped out into the street. I spread my arms and balanced myself to move quickly, left or right, depending on the

motorcycle's path.

But then I noticed that none of the

other pedestrians around me seemed concerned. A smile finally crossed my lips. I remembered Etienne mentioning that oversize motorcycles were popular in Paris and that their riders acted as if they were on much smaller mopeds or

scooters, sometimes circumnavigating traffic by going up onto sidewalks.

The bike rider, decked out in his blue blazer and tan slacks, was a Paris businessman, not an assassin. He passed by without so much as a nod. I'm losing

it, aren't I? But that was understandable. Who wouldn't begin to lose it under this pressure?

At 8:45 that morning, I walked to the

was located in L'Hôtel Beauvau.

We had just over thirty-three hours left to doomsday. The room was a strange mix of expensive-looking eighteenth-century-style furniture and

genuinely expensive modern technology. In sharp contrast, scenes from London, Paris, Washington, and Tel Aviv played on TV monitors on the walls. Mostly

front of a room full of important French police and army officials. We were inside the Ministère de l'Intérieur which

empty streets. Heavily armed soldiers and police everywhere.

We are at war, I thought to myself, with a madman.

I'd been told that I could speak in English to the group, but it would be best

if I went slowly and enunciated my words clearly. I figured they were afraid I was going to deliver my talk in street slang that no one in the room would understand.

"My name is Dr. Alex Cross. I'm a

forensic psychologist," I began. "I was a homicide detective in Washington, D.C.,

before I became an agent with the FBI. Less than a year ago, I worked on a case that put me in touch with the Red Mafiya. In particular, I was involved with a former KGB man known only as the Wolf. The Wolf is my subject this morning."

I could have done the rest in my sleep. For the next twenty minutes I talked about the Russian. But even as I

listen to what I had to say, they were steadfast in their belief that Islamic terrorists were the real source of the threat to the four targeted cities. Either the Wolf was part of al Qaeda or he was

was finishing up and the question-andanswer period began, it was clear to me that although the French were willing to

I was trying to keep my mind open, but if their theory was correct, my mind would be completely blown. I just didn't buy it. The Wolf was Red Mafiya.

working with them.

About eleven o'clock, I went back to my cubicle office and found that I had a new partner.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 78

A new partner? Now?

Everything was going so fast; it was all a blur to me, often incomprehensible. I had to assume that the FBI had contacted someone and pulled some strings. Someone had. The new partner was an agent de police, a woman named Maud Boulard, who immediately informed me that we would be working in the "French police way," whatever the hell that was supposed to mean.

Physically, she was very much like Etienne Marteau: thin, with an aquiline nose and sharp features—but shiny red hair. She went out of her way to tell me she had visited New York and Los Angeles and didn't care for either city at all.

"Our deadline is close," I told her.
"I know the deadline, Dr. Cross.

Everyone does. To work fast does not mean to work intelligently."

What she called "our surveillance of the Red Mafiya" began along the Parc

Monceau in the eighth arrondissement. Unlike in the United States, where the Russians seemed to hang out in such

working-class neighborhoods as Brighton Beach in New York, the Mafiya was apparently situated in

pricier digs here.

"Maybe because they know Paris better and have operated here longer,"

better and have operated here longer," Maud suggested. "I think so. I have

They don't believe in your Wolf, by the way. Believe me, I've asked around."

And that's what we did for the next hour or so. Talked about the Wolf to

Russian thugs Boulard knew. If nothing else, the morning was beautiful, with

known the Russian thugs for many years.

bright blue skies, which made it excruciating for me. What was I doing there?

At 1:30, Maud said cheerfully, "Let's have lunch. With the Russians, of course. I know just the place."

She took me into what she called "one of the oldest Russian restaurants in Paris," Le Daru. The front room was paneled with warm pine as if we were inside the dacha of a wealthy Muscovite.

I was angry, but trying not to show it. We simply didn't have time for a sit-down lunch.

Nevertheless, Maud and I ate. I

wanted to strangle her, the obsequious waiter, anybody I could get my hands on. I'm certain she had no idea how angry I was. Some detective!

As we finished, I noticed that two men at a nearby table were watching us, or maybe they were eyeing Maud, with her lustrous red hair.

I told her about the men, and she shrugged it off as "the way men are in Paris. Pigs."

"Let's see if they follow," she said as we got up and left the restaurant. "I doubt that they will. I don't know them. I "They're leaving right behind us," I told her.

"Good for them. It is the exit after all."

The short rue Daru ended at rue du Faubourg Saint-Honoré, which Maud

told me was a window-shopping experience that continued all the way to the place Vendôme. We had walked only

know everybody here. Not your Wolf,

though."

a block when a white Lincoln limousine pulled up alongside us.

A dark-bearded man opened the rear door and looked out. "Please get in the car. Don't make a scene," he said in English with a Russian accent. "Get in,

now. I'm not fooling around."

"No," said Maud. "We don't get in your car. You come out here and talk to us. Who the hell are you? Who do you think you are?"

The bearded man pulled a gun and fired twice. I couldn't believe what had just happened right in the middle of a Paris street.

Maud Boulard was down on the

sidewalk, and I was certain she was dead. Blood seeped from a horrible, jagged wound near the center of her forehead. Her red hair was splayed in a hundred directions. Her eyes were open wide, staring up into the blue sky. In the fall, one of her shoes had been thrown

off and lay out in the middle of the street. "Get in the car, Dr. Cross. I won't

ask you again. I'm tired of being polite," said the Russian, whose gun was pointed at my face. "Get in, or I'll shoot you in the head, too. With pleasure."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 79

"Now comes show-and-tell time," the black-bearded Russian man said once I was inside the limousine with him. "Isn't that how they say it in American schools? You have two children in school, don't you? So, I'm showing you things that are important, and I'm telling you what they mean. I told the detective to get in the car and she didn't do it. Maud Boulard was her name, no? Maud Boulard wanted to act like the tough cop. Now she's the dead cop, not so tough after all."

The car sped away from the murder scene, leaving the French detective dead in the street. We changed cars a few

much less obtrusive gray Peugeot. For what it was worth, I memorized both license plates.

"Now we go for a little ride in the country" said the Pussion man who

blocks from the shooting, getting into a

country," said the Russian man, who seemed to be having a good time so far. "Who are you? What do you want

from me?" I asked him. He was tall,

maybe six-five, and muscular. Very much the way I had heard the Wolf described. He was holding a Beretta pointed at the side of my head. His hand was rock steady, and he was no stranger to guns and how to use them.

"It doesn't matter who I am. not in

"It doesn't matter who I am, not in the least. You're looking for the Wolf, aren't you? I'm taking you to meet him now."

He threw me a dark look, then handed me a cloth sack. "Put this over

handed me a cloth sack. "Put this over your head. And do exactly as I say from now on. Remember, show-and-tell." "I remember." I put on the hood. I

would never forget the cold-blooded murder of Detective Boulard. The Wolf

and his people killed easily, didn't they? What did that mean for the four cities under threat? Would they kill thousands and thousands so easily? Was that their plan to demonstrate power and control? To get revenge for some mysterious

I don't know how long we rode around in the Peugeot, but it was well over an hour: slow city driving at first,

crime in the past?

Then we were slowing again, possibly traveling on a dirt road. Hard

then an hour or so on the open highway.

bounces and bumps shocked and twisted my spine. "You can take off the hood now," Black Beard spoke to me again. "We're almost there, Dr. Cross. Nothing much to

see out here, anyway."

I took off the hood and saw that we were in the French countryside somewhere, riding down an unpaved road with tall grass waving on either side. No markers or signs anywhere that

"He's staying out here?" I asked. I wondered if I was really being taken to the Wolf. For what possible reason?

I could see.

"For the moment, Dr. Cross. But then he'll be gone again. As you know, he moves around a lot. He is like a ghost, an apparition. You'll see what I mean in a moment."

The Peugeot pulled up in front of a small stone farmhouse. Two armed men immediately came out the front door to meet us. Both held automatic weapons aimed at my upper body and face.

"Inside," said one of them. He had a white beard but was nearly as large and muscular as the man who had accompanied me thus far.

It was obvious that he had seniority over Black Beard, who had seemed in control until now. "Inside!" he repeated to me. "Hurry up! Can't you hear, Dr. "He is an animal," White Beard then said to me. "He shouldn't have killed the woman. I am the Wolf, Dr. Cross. It's good to meet you at last."

Cross?"

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 80

"Don't try to do anything heroic, by the way. Because then I'll have to kill you and find a new messenger," he said as we walked inside the farmhouse.

"I'm a messenger now? For what?" I asked.

The Russian waved off my question as if it were a pesky fly buzzing around his hairy face.

"Time is flying. Weren't you thinking that with the French detective? They were just keeping you out of the way, the French. Didn't you think as much?"

"The thought crossed my mind," I said. Meanwhile, I couldn't believe that this was the Wolf. I didn't believe it. But

who was he? Why had I been brought there?
"Of course it did. You're not a stupid

man," he said.

We had entered a small, dark room with a fieldstone fireplace, but no fire. The room was cluttered with heavy

wooden furniture, old magazines, yellowing newspapers. The windows were tightly shuttered. The place was airless. The only light came from a

"Why am I here? Why show yourself to me now?" I finally asked him.

"Sit down," said the Russian.

single standing lamp.

"All right. I'm a messenger," I said, and lowered myself into a chair.

He nodded. "Yes. A messenger. It's

the seriousness of the situation. This is your last chance."

"We understand," I said.

Almost before I had finished

important that everyone fully understand

speaking, he lunged forward and hit me in the jaw.

My chair went over backward, I was in free fall, then my head struck the stone floor. I might have gone out for a couple of seconds.

But then I was being dragged back up by a couple of the other men in the room. My head was spinning and there was blood in my mouth.

"I want to be clear about this," the Russian continued. It was as if hitting me had been a necessary pause in his speech. "You are a messenger. And none of you fools understand the seriousness now. Just as no one seems to understand, really understand, that they are going to die, and what that means, until the

moment it happens. . . . The stupid woman in Paris today? Do you think she understood before a speeding bullet blew open her brain? The money must

be paid this time, Dr. Cross. In full. In all four cities. The prisoners must be released."

"Why the prisoners?" I asked.

He hit me again, but this time I didn't go down. Then he turned and left the

He came back a moment later, with a

heavy black valise. He set it on the floor

room. "Because I say so!"

right in front of me.

"This is the dark side of the moon," he said. Then he opened it for me to see

he said. Then he opened it for me to see inside.

"It's called a tactical nuclear explosive device. More simply, a 'suitcase nuke.' Produces a horrific explosion. Unlike conventional

warheads, it operates at ground level. Easy to conceal, easy to transport. No mess, no fuss. You've seen pictures of Hiroshima, of course. Everyone has."

"What about Hiroshima?"

"This suitcase has approximately the same yield. Devastating. We, the old Soviet Union, used to manufacture these bombs by the truckload.

"Want to know where some of the

others are right now? Well, there is one or more in Washington, D.C., Tel Aviv, Paris, London. So, as you see, we have a new member in the exclusive 'nuclear community.' We are the new members."

Was there really a nuclear bomb in the suitcase?

"That's the message you want me to

I was starting to feel cold all over.

deliver?"

"The other reactors are in place. And

to show my good faith, you can take this reactor back with you. Let the boys in the shop look it over. But tell them to look very quickly.

"Now, maybe, maybe, you understand. Get out of here. To me, you are a gnat, but at least you are a gnat.

Take the nuclear weapon with you. Consider it a gift. Don't say I didn't warn you about what was going to happen. Now, go. Hurry, Dr. Cross."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 81

Everything was a blur from there on that afternoon. The dark cloth hood had just been for show, I figured, since I wore nothing over my eyes on the ride back to Paris, which seemed a lot shorter than the ride out.

I kept asking my captors where I was being taken with the suitcase bomb, but neither man in the car would give me an answer. Not a word. They spoke nothing but Russian on the ride.

To me, you are a gnat. . . . Take the nuclear weapon with you. . . .

Soon after we entered Paris, the Peugeot stopped in the crowded parking lot of a shopping center. A gun was held

the suitcase. "What's this about?" I asked my captors but received no answer.

Moments later the Peugeot stopped

in my face, and then I was handcuffed to

again, at place Igor Stravinsky, one of the more populated areas of Paris, though mostly deserted now.

"Get out!" I was told—the first English words I'd heard in close to an hour.

Slowly, carefully, I emerged from the sedan with the bomb. I felt a little dizzy. The Peugeot roared off. I was aware of a certain liquidity in

the air, particles, a real sense of atoms. I stood motionless near the huge plaza of the Centre National d'Art et de Culture Georges Pompidou, handcuffed to a

black valise that weighed at least fifty pounds, probably more.

Supposedly it carried a nuclear bomb, the full equivalent of the ones

Harry Truman had ordered dropped on Japan. My body was already covered with cold sweat, and I felt as if I were watching myself in a dream. Could it all

end like this? Of course it could. All bets were off, but especially any bets on my life. Was I about to be blown up? Would I suffer radiation sickness if I wasn't?

I spotted two policemen near a Virgin record store and made my way up

to them. I explained who I was, and then told them to please call the directeur de

la sécurité publique.

black valise, but I quickly revealed the contents to the director when he came on the line. "Is the threat real, Dr. Cross?" he wanted to know. "Is the bomb live?" "I don't know. How could I? Please respond as if it is. That's what I'm

I didn't tell the cops what was in the

doing." Get your bomb squad over here. Now! Get off the phone! Within a few minutes, the whole of

the Beaubourg district had been evacuated, except for a dozen or so patrolmen, the military police, and several bomb-squad experts. At least I hoped they were experts, the best France had to a ffer

had to offer.

I was told to sit on the ground, which
I did. Right alongside the black valise,

do, because I had no choice in the matter. I was feeling sick to my stomach, and sitting made it a little better, though not much. At least the initial dizziness I'd felt was starting to pass.

of course. I did everything I was told to

First, a bomb-sniffing dog was brought in to smell me and the suitcase. A handsome, young German shepherd, the chien explo, approached very

the chien explo, approached very cautiously, eyeing the suitcase as if it were a rival dog, an enemy.

When the shepherd got within five

yards, she completely froze. A low growl rumbled up from her chest. The hair on her neck rose. Oh shit. Oh God, I

thought.

The dog continued to growl until she

apart, possibly vaporized, isn't pleasant. It's a tough one to wrap your mind around.

After what seemed like an eternity, though it was only a few minutes, two

bomb-squad technicians in moon suits cautiously headed my way. I saw that one of them was clutching bolt cutters. God bless him! This was such an

was certain of radioactive contents, then she quickly retreated to her handlers. Very wise of the shepherd. I was left alone again. I'd never been more frightened in my life, nothing had come even close. The thought of being blown

incredibly surreal moment.

The man with the cutters knelt down beside me. "It's okay, you're okay," he

whispered. Then he carefully sliced through the handcuffs.

"You can leave. Get up slowly," he

said. I rose cautiously, rubbing my wrist, but already backing away from the suitcase.

My alien-looking escorts and I

hurried out of the designated "hot zone" to where two black bomb-squad vans were parked. Of course, the van was still in the "hot zone" as well. If a nuclear bomb went off, at least a square mile of Paris would be vaporized instantly.

From inside one of the vans I watched the team of technicians work to deactivate the bomb. If they could. I never considered leaving the scene, and

my life. No one in the van spoke, and we were all holding our breath. The idea of dying like this, so suddenly, was almost impossible to conceive.

Word came back from the French

the next few minutes were the longest of

bomb technicians: "The suitcase is open."

Then, less than a minute later, "The

fissile material is there. It's real. It seems to be in working order, unfortunately."

The bomb was real. It wasn't a fake threat. The Wolf was still keeping his promises, wasn't he? The sadistic bastard was everything he said he was.

Then I saw one of the technicians pump his arm in the air. A cheer went up

first, but it seemed like good news. No one explained anything to me.
"What just happened?" I finally asked in French.

around the console in the van. I didn't understand exactly what had happened at

One of the techs turned to me. "There's no trigger! It couldn't blow up.

They didn't want it to explode, thank God. They only wanted to scare the shit out of us."

"It worked," I told him. "I shit you

not."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 82

Over the next couple of hours it was

revealed that the suitcase bomb had everything necessary for a nuclear explosion except a single part, a pulsed neutron emitter, a trigger. All the difficult elements were there. I couldn't eat that night, couldn't keep anything down, couldn't concentrate at all. I'd been tested, but I couldn't get the idea of radiation poisoning to leave my brain.

I also couldn't get Maud Boulard out of my mind: her face, the tenor of her voice, our absurd lunch together, the detective's stubbornness and naïveté, her red hair splayed out on the sidewalk. The casual brutality of the Wolf and his

people.

I kept flashing back to the Russian who had struck me in the farmhouse.

Had it been the Wolf? Why would he let me see him? And then, why not?

I went back to the Relais and

suddenly wished that I hadn't asked for a room facing the street. My body felt numb all over, exhausted, but my mind wouldn't stop racing at warp speed. The noise rising from the street was a

disturbance that I couldn't handle right now. They have nuclear weapons. This

isn't a bluff. It's going to happen. A holocaust.

I decided to call the kids at about six o'clock, their time. I talked to them about all the things in Paris that I didn't see that

happened to me. So far, the media had none of it, but that wouldn't last.

Then I called Nana. I told her the

day—everything except what had really

truth about how it had felt sitting on the pavement with a bomb attached to my wrist. She was the one I always told about my worst days, and this was probably the worst of them all.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 83

When I arrived at my small office at the Préfecture I got another surprise. Martin Lodge was waiting there for me. It was 7:15: ten hours and forty-five minutes to doomsday.

I shook Martin's hand, and told him how glad I was that he was there. "Not much time left. Why are you here?"

"Last words, I suppose. I have to give the final update on the situation in London. As well as Tel Aviv. From our vantage point, anyway."

"And?"

Martin shook his head. "You don't want to hear the same rotten story twice."

"Yeah. I do."

"Not this story, you don't. Oh hell, it's all cocked up, Alex. I think he might have to blow up a city to get them to act. That's how bad it is. The worst is Tel

Aviv. I think it's basically hopeless there. They don't make deals with terrorists. You asked."

The morning briefing started at eight

sharp and included a quick summary on the briefcase bomb from the technicians who had taken it apart. They reported that the bomb was authentic in design, but there was no neutron emitter, no trigger, and possibly not enough radioactive material inside.

An army general spoke about the current situation in Paris: the people

streets, but only a small percentage had actually fled the city. The army was prepared to move in and declare martial law about the time of the deadline, which was sixP.M.

were frightened and staying off the

Then it was time for Martin. He strode to the front of the room and spoke in French. "Good morning. Isn't it incredible what can happen once we adapt ourselves to a new reality? The people of London have been splendid, for the most part. Some rioting. Not too much in terms of what could have

for the most part. Some rioting. Not too much in terms of what could have happened. I suspect that those who might have given us the most trouble got out of London early. As for Tel Aviv, they're so accustomed to crisis and living under

threatening scenarios—let's just say that they're handling this very well.

"Anyway, that's the good news. The bad is that we've raised most of the

money, but not all of it. That's in London. And Tel Aviv? As best we can tell,

they're not going to make a deal. The Israelis hold their cards very close to the vest, so we're not sure what's transpired there.

there.

"We're putting on pressure, of course. And so is Washington. I know that private individuals have been

approached to put up the entire ransom. That could still happen. But it isn't clear if the government will take the money. They simply don't want to meet terrorist demands.

said. "To be blunt, we don't have time for a lot of bullshit. Somebody has to drop the hammer on anyone who's

"Less than ten hours," Martin Lodge

resisting paying the ransom."

A policeman had come up to me and was whispering against my ear. "Sorry.

You're needed, Dr. Cross."

"What is it?" I whispered back. I

wanted to hear everything that was being said in this meeting.

"Just come. It's an emergency. Right

"Just come. It's an emergency. Right now, please."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 84

I knew that, ironically, an "emergency" had to be considered good news at this point in the countdown. At 8:30 that morning I was inside a speeding police cruiser, the blare of its siren disturbing the peace all along our route across Paris.

My God, the streets were bleak and deserted. Except for soldiers and the police, anyway. My part in an ongoing interrogation was explained to me during the ride. "We have an arms dealer in custody, Dr. Cross. We have reason to believe that he helped supply the bombs. Maybe he's one of the men who you saw out in the country. He's a Russian—with

Minutes later we arrived in front of the Brigade Criminelle, a dark, nineteenth-century building in a quiet neighborhood along the Seine. Actually,

this was the infamous "La Crim" from countless French movies and police stories, including several about

a white beard."

Inspector Maigret that Nana and I had read together when I was a kid. Life imitates art, or something like that.

Once inside La Crim I was led up a rickety staircase, all the way to the top

I was brought down a narrow hallway to room 414. The brigadier who escorted me knocked once, and then we

floor, the fourth. The interrogation was

being conducted up there.

I recognized the Russian arms dealer instantly.

stepped inside.

They had caught White Beard, the one who'd told me he was the Wolf.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 85

The room was small and cramped, as it was situated right under the eaves. It had a low, rain-stained, sloping ceiling and a tiny Velux, a skylight. I looked at my watch—8:45. Tick, tick, tick.

I was hurriedly introduced to the interrogation team of Captain Coridon and Lieutenant Leroux—and their prisoner, a Russian arms dealer, Artur Nikitin. I already knew Nikitin, of course. He wore no shirt or shoes and was cuffed, hands behind his back. He was also sweating profusely. He was definitely the white-bearded Russian from the farmhouse.

with al Qaeda that had made him millions. It was believed that he was involved with suitcase nukes, that he knew how many had been sold, and that he knew who had bought them.

"Cowards!" he was shouting at the

French police as I entered the room. "Fucking goddamn cowards. You can't do this to me. I've done nothing wrong.

I had been told during the ride over that the Russian hoodlum did business

You French claim to be such liberals, but you are not!"

He looked at me and pretended he had no idea who I was. His bad acting made me smile.

Captain Coridon told him, "You may have noticed that you have been brought

you're not being charged as an 'illegal trafficker in arms.' The charge is murder. We are homicide detectives. Trust me, there are no liberals in this room, unless it's you."

Nikitin's brown eyes remained wide

to the Préfecture de Police rather than the offices of the DST. That's because

with anger, but I also detected traces of confusion, especially now that I was there. "This is bullshit! I can't believe it. I've done nothing wrong. I am a businessman! A French citizen. I want my lawyer!"

Coridon looked at me. "You try."

I stepped forward and threw a hard uppercut into the Russian's jaw. His head snapped back. "We're not even

tomorrow. Not after your bombs help destroy Paris and kill thousands."

The Russian yelled at me. "I tell you again—I've done nothing! You can't do anything to me. What weapons? What

close to being even," I told him. "No one knows that you're here! You will be tried as a terrorist, and you will be executed. No one will care, not after

bombs? Who am I, Saddam Hussein? You can't do this."

"We can, and we will execute you," shouted Captain Coridon from off to the side. "You are a dead man as soon as you leave this room, Nikitin. We have other scum to talk to. Whoever helps us first, we help them."

"Get him out of here!" Coridon

finally said. "We're wasting time with this bastard!"

The brigadier grabbed Nikitin by his hair and by the band of his pants. He

threw him halfway across the room. The Russian's head smacked against the wall, but he scrambled to his bare feet. His eyes were large and fearful now. Maybe he was beginning to understand that the

Everything had changed now.

"Last chance to talk," I said.

"Remember, you're just a gnat to us."

rules of interrogation had changed.

"I didn't sell anything to anyone here in France! I sell in Angola, for diamonds!" Nikitin said.

"I don't care, and I don't believe you!" Captain Coridon shouted at the top "I know something!" Nikitin suddenly blurted out. "The suitcase nukes! The number is four. It's al Qaeda

of his voice. "Get him out of here."

who's behind it. Al Qaeda made the plan! They call the shots. The prisoners of war—everything."

I turned to the French policemen and

shook my head. "The Wolf gave him up to us. And he's not going to be pleased with his 'performance.' He'll kill him for

us. I don't believe a word he just said."

Nikitin looked at the three of us, then he spit, "Al Qaeda! Fuck you if you don't like it, or believe it."

I stared back at him. "Prove what you're saying. Make us believe you. Make me believe you, because I don't."

"All right," Nikitin said then. "I can do that. I'll make all of you believers."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 86

As soon as I arrived back at the Préfecture, Martin Lodge caught up with me. "Let's go!" He started to pull me along.

"What? Go where?" I looked at my watch—something I seemed to be doing every couple of minutes now. It was 10:25.

"A raid is going down in a few minutes. The hideout that the Russian gave you—it's real."

Martin and I hurried upstairs to the crisis room at police headquarters. My old pal Etienne Marteau met us and guided us to a row of monitors set up to view the raid. Everything was happening

maybe, but what choice did we have?

Marteau said, "They're confident,
Alex. They coordinated with the power

incredibly fast for a change. Too fast

authority, EDF-GDF. The power grid in the area goes down and then they go in." I nodded at what he was saying and watched the screens in front of us. It was

strange to be once removed from the action. Then it was happening! French soldiers appeared out of nowhere, dozens of them. They wore RAID jackets: Recherche, assistance, intervention et dissuasion. They carried assault rifles.

The soldiers rushed toward a small town house that looked harmless enough. They broke down the front door. It

happened in seconds.

A UBL, a French version of the Hummer, appeared and crashed through a wooden gate in the rear. Soldiers

jumped from the UBL.

"We'll see soon enough," I said to
Martin. "RAID is good at what they
do?"

"Yes, they are skillful at destruction and death."

A couple of the French police were miked and carried cameras, so we got to see and hear much of the raid as it happened. A door was thrown open, a gun fired from inside, then a blaze of return fire.

Someone's shrill scream, the sound of a body thumping against the

floorboards.

Two gunmen ran out into a narrow hallway. Both in their underwear. Shot

down before they knew what hit them.

A half-naked female with a handgun
—shot in the throat.

"Don't kill them all," I muttered at the monitor.

A Cougar helicopter swooped down and more commandos appeared. Inside the house, soldiers swarmed into a bedroom, then fell on a man lying on a cot. They took him alive, thank God.

Other terrorists were surrendering, their hands held high.

Then more rapid gunshots, off camera this time.

A suspect was marched down the

Then we waited impatiently for news. The cameras at the raid site were shut down. We waited some more.

Finally, about three in the afternoon, an army colonel stood at the front of the room in the crisis center. Every seat was

taken; there was no more standing room;

The colonel began, "We have identified the prisoners, those who are alive. One from Iran, a Saudi, a

the tension was almost unbearable.

hall with a gun held to his head. An older man. The Wolf? Was it possible they had captured him? The policeman with the gun was smiling as if he had scored something big. The raid was certainly fast and efficient. At least four of the terrorists had been captured alive.

Qaeda. We know who they are. It is doubtful that we caught the Wolf. It is also doubtful that these terrorists were involved in the threat to Paris. I am sorry to give you bad news at this late hour. We did our best. But he remains a step ahead of us. I'm sorry."

Moroccan, two Egyptians. A cell. Al

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 87

The terrible, "final" deadline was so close now, and no one had any more information on what would happen next. We seemed to have run out of options to stop the Wolf.

At 5:45, I was one of several

nervous men and women climbing out of dark Renaults and then hurrying toward the tall ironwork gates of the Ministère de l'Intérieur building for a meeting with the DGSE, which is the French equivalent of our CIA. The front gates were immense. Like supplicants entering a cathedral, we seemed small and insignificant as we passed through them. I felt small and insignificant, as well as

at the mercy of higher powers, and not just God.

The gates opened onto a grand

courtyard, a vast expanse of cobblestones, and I was reminded of the horse-drawn carriages that had once rolled through these very gates. Had there been progress in the world since

then? It didn't seem like it on that particular day.

I walked with other police officers, government ministers, and directors into a magnificent entry hall with a marbled paints and white tile floor. Armed guards

a magnificent entry hall with a marbled pink and white tile floor. Armed guards lined the staircase. Hardly anyone spoke on the way up. There was only the dull sound of our plodding footsteps, the occasional nervous cough. It was

would be bombed and thousands would die. There could be a much higher number of casualties. A hundred thousand or more was a possibility.

A Russian gangster is doing this? One with mysterious ties to al Qaeda? We are at his mercy now, aren't we? How incredibly strange.

possible that within the hour, Paris, London, Washington, and Tel Aviv

The meeting was in the Salle des Fêtes, and once again I couldn't help wondering what I was doing there. I was the American representative in Paris because the FBI wanted me there, because there was a chance that I could make a difference with my experience as a psychologist and homicide detective,

happened to the Wolf in Paris a long time ago. We still hadn't figured out what.

Inside the main hall, tables had been arranged in a U shape and covered with

because something tragic might have

plain white fabric. Propped on easels were laminated maps of Europe, the Middle East, and the United States. The target areas were circled in thick red crayon. Crude, but effective.

A dozen or more TV monitors were

up and running. So was a state-of-the-art teleconferencing system. There were more gray and blue suits than usual, more important people, more obvious power on display. For some reason, I noticed several pairs of rimless titanium

Live scenes from London, Washington, Paris, and Tel Aviv played on the TV monitors mounted on the walls. The cities were quiet. Most of the army and police were inside as well. Etienne Marteau came and sat beside me. Martin Lodge had already returned

ever-fashionable

eyeglasses—the

French.

to London.

realistically, here in Paris, Alex?" Etienne asked.
"Etienne, I don't know what's happening. No one does. Maybe we stopped the main cell of terrorists earlier. My guess is that everything has

been leading up to today's deadline. I

"What do you think our chances are,

happened to him here in Paris. We still don't know what it is. What can I say? We're out of time. We're fucked."

Suddenly, Etienne sat up straight in his chair "My God it's President

think the Wolf knew how difficult it would be to pull this together. Something

his chair. "My God, it's President Debauney."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 88

Aramis Debauney, the French president, looked to be in his mid-fifties and was very well dressed for the occasion, very formal. He was a compact man with slicked-back silvergray hair and a pencil-thin mustache, and he wore wire-rimmed eyeglasses. He looked somewhat calm and in control of his emotions as he strode quickly to the front of the room, and began to talk. You could hear a pin drop.

"As you know, I have worked in the trenches and on the front lines of law enforcement for many years myself. So I wanted you to hear from me now. I also wanted to be with you for these final

minutes before the deadline runs out.

"I have news. The money has been raised. In Paris. In London. Washington.

And in Tel Aviv, with help from many friends of Israel around the world. The entire sum will be transferred in three and a half minutes, approximately five minutes before the deadline expires.

"I want to thank everyone in this room, and all of those you represent, for countless hours of hard work, for personal sacrifices that no one should ask, for the most heroic effort, incredible bravery by so many. We did the best that

we could, and most important, we will survive this crisis. Eventually we will get these inhuman bastards, all of them! We will get this Wolf, the most inhuman There was a gold Empire clock on the wall behind the president. Everyone watched it intently. How could we not?

At 5:55 Paris time, President

of them all "

Debauney said, "The money is being transferred now. It will happen in a matter of seconds. . . . All right. It's done. This should be over now. We will

be all right. Congratulations to all of you. Thank you."

There was an audible sigh of relief in the cavernous room, smiles and

handshakes, some hugs.

Then we waited, almost a reflex action.

For any kind of communication from the Wolf.

For breaking news from the other targeted cities: Washington, London, Tel Aviv.

The final sixty seconds before the deadline were incredibly tense and

dramatic, even though the ransom had

been delivered. I could do nothing but watch the second hand on the clock. Finally, I said a prayer for my family, for the people in all four cities, for the world we live in.

twelve in Washington; seven in Tel Aviv.

The deadline had passed. But what did it mean? Were we truly safe?

Then it was six in Paris and London;

There were no significant changes on any of the monitors, no disruptions, no

Nothing.

And there was no call from the Wolf.

Two more minutes passed.

explosions on the live video feeds.

Ten minutes.

And then, a terrible explosion rocked the room—and the world.

ocked the room—and the world.
Part Five
DELIVER US FROM EVIL

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 89

The bomb, or bombs, not nuclear, but powerful enough to cause massive damage, went off in the first arrondissement, near the Louvre. The entire area, a maze of lanes and deadend streets, was nearly flattened. Close to a thousand people died immediately, or at least within a few seconds. The terrible multiple explosions were heard, and felt, all over Paris.

The Louvre suffered only minor damage from the blasts, but the three-block area covering rue de Marengo, rue de l'Oratoire and rue Bailleul was almost completely destroyed. As was a nearby bridge—a small one—crossing

the Seine.

A bridge. Another bridge. In Paris this time.

Not a word of explanation was heard from the Wolf. He didn't take credit for the wanton and despicable act, nor did he deny it.

He didn't need to explain his actions, did he? He thought he was God.

There are other supremely arrogant people who labor inside our government in Washington, and also some who work in the national media, who believe that they can accurately predict what will happen in the future because they know, or think they know, what happened in the past. I suspect it's the same in Paris,

London, Tel Aviv, and everywhere else

really know. But they don't know. Nobody knows.

All bets are off nowadays. Anything can happen, and sooner or later, it probably will. We don't seem to be getting any smarter as a species, just crazier and crazier. Or at the very least,

a whole lot more dangerous. Unbelievably, unbearably more

dangerous.

in the world: all these basically intelligent, maybe even well-intentioned people who proclaim, "That couldn't happen," or "Here's how it would happen in the real world." As if they

Or maybe that was just my mood as I flew back from Paris. A terrible, terrible tragedy had occurred there after all. The

Wolf had won, if what he did could be called winning, and it hadn't even been a close contest.

A power-mad Russian gangster had

adopted the tactics of terrorism, or so it seemed. He was better than we were—more organized, more cunning, and far

more brutal when he needed results. I couldn't even remember the last time we'd had a victory in our battle with the Wolf and his forces. He was smarter. I just prayed that it was over now. Could it be? Or was it another calm before another storm? I couldn't bear to think about that possibility.

I arrived home a little before three

on a Thursday afternoon. The kids were back; Nana had never left Fifth Street.

was what I needed: cook a good meal, talk to Nana and the kids about anything we wanted to talk about, get lots of hugs. Not have a single thought about what had happened in Paris, or the Wolf, or any

When I got there I insisted on cooking dinner, wouldn't take no for an answer. It

kind of police work.

So I made my interpretation of a French-style dinner and I even spoke French with Damon and Jannie while the meal was being prepared. Jannie set the

dining table with Nana's silver, cloth napkins, a lace tablecloth that we used only for special occasions. The meal? Langoustines rôties brunoises de papaye poivrons et oignons doux —prawns with papaya, peppers, and onions. For a main

wine sauce. We drank small glasses of wine with the meal, a delightful Minervois, and ate with enthusiasm.

But for dessert—brownies and ice

course, chicken stew in a sweet red

cream. I was back in America, after all.
I was home, thank God.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 90

Home again, home again.

The next day I didn't go to work and the kids stayed out of school. It seemed to satisfy everybody's needs, even Nana Mama's, who encouraged us all to play hooky. I called Jamilla a couple of times, and talking to her helped, as it always did, but something seemed off between us.

For our day of hooky-playing I took the kids on a day trip to St. Michaels, Maryland, which is situated on Chesapeake Bay. The village turned out to be a lively snapshot of quaint, coastal charm: a thriving marina, a couple of small inns with rockers set out on the Chesapeake Bay Maritime Museum, where we got to watch real shipwrights working on a skipjack restoration. It felt as though we were back in the nineteenth century, which didn't seem like such a bad idea.

porches, even a lighthouse. And the

After lunch at the Crab Claw Restaurant we embarked on an actual skipjack charter. Nana Mama had taken her school classes there many times over the years, but she stayed home this trip, protesting that she had too much work to do around the house. I only hoped she was really feeling okay. I still remembered the way she used to teach her students on the field trips, so I took over as the guest lecturer.

fleet of working sailing vessels in North America. Can you imagine? These ships have no winches, just manpower and blocks and tackles. The fishermen are

"Jannie and Damon, this is the last

Nana had told her classes years before.

Then off we went on the Mary

Merchant for a two-and-a-half-hour

called watermen," I told them, just as

The captain and his mate showed us how to hoist a sail with a block and tackle, and soon we had caught a breeze with a loud whoosh and the rhythmic smack of waves against the hull. What an afternoon it was. Gazing up at a sixty-foot mast made from a single log shipped all the way from Oregon. The

oystershells. The closeness of my two eldest children, the look of trust and love in their eyes. Most of the time, anyway. We passed stands of pine woods,

smells of salt air, linseed oil, residual

open fields where tenant farmers raised corn and soybean, and great white-columned estates that had once been plantations. I almost felt as if I were back in another century and it was a good break, much needed R & R. Only a couple of times did I drift into thoughts of police work, but I quickly pulled myself back.

I half listened as the captain explained that "only boats under sail" can dredge for oysters—except twice a week, when engine-powered yawls

were allowed on the bay. I suspected that it was a clever conservation ploy to make the watermen work hard for their oysters; otherwise, the supply might run out.

What a fine day—as the boat heeled

to starboard, the boom swung out, the mainsail and jib filled the air with a loud smack, and Jannie, Damon, and I squinted into the setting sun. And we

understood, for a little while anyway, that this had something to do with the way life was supposed to be lived, and maybe even why such moments needed to be cherished and remembered.

"Best day of my life," Jannie told me. "I'm not even exaggerating too

much "

"Same here," I said. "And I'm not exaggerating at all."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 91

When we got home early that evening I saw a scuffed-up white van parked in front of the house. I recognized the bright green logo on the door: HOMECARE HEALTH PROJECT. What was this? Why was Dr. Coles there?

Suddenly I was nervous that something had happened to Nana while I was out with the kids. The fragile state of her health had been on my mind more and more lately; the reality that she was in her mid-eighties now, though she wouldn't tell exactly how old she was, or rather, she lied about it. I hurried out of the car and up the front steps ahead of

called as I opened the front door and Damon and Jannie slid by me on either side. "We're just kicking back, Alex. No need for alarm. Take your time."

"I'm in here with Kayla," Nana

the kids by a couple of strides.

"So who's alarmed?" I asked as I slowed and walked into the living room, saw the two of them "kicking back" on the sofa.

"You were, Mr. Worrywart. You saw the Health truck outside, and what did you think? Sickness," said Nana.

She and Kayla both laughed merrily, and I had to smile, too—at myself. I made a very weak protest. "Never happened."

"Then why did you rush up the front

Oh, forget it, Alex," Nana said, and laughed some more.

Then she waved her hand as if to chase away any unwanted negativity in

the room. "Come. Sit down with us for a

steps like your trousers were on fire?

minute or two. Can you spare it? Tell me everything. How was St. Michaels? Has it changed very much?" "Oh, I suspect that St. Michaels is

pretty much the same as it was a hundred years ago."

"Which is a good thing," Nana said. "Thank God for small favors."

I went over and gave Kayla a kiss on the cheek. She had helped Nana when she was sick a while back, and now she stopped in regularly. Actually, I'd known doctors to the homes of the sick in Southeast. Kayla had started it, and she kept it going with incredibly hard work, including fund-raising, which she mostly did herself. "You look good," I told her. The words just came out. "Yes, I lost some weight, Alex," she said, and cocked an eyebrow at me. "It's all this running around that I do. I try my

best to keep the weight on, but it just

I had noticed. Kayla is close to six

comes off, damn it."

Kayla since we were both growing up in the neighborhood. She was one of us who got out, received an education, and then came back, to give back. The Homecare Health Project brought kid. She's always had a sweet, pretty face and a disposition to match. "It also sets a better example for folks," she said. "Too many people in the neighborhood are overweight. Too many are obese, even a lot of the kids. They think it's in their genes." Then Kayla laughed. "Plus, I must admit, it has helped my social life, my outlook on things, whatever. Whatever." "Well, you always look good to me," I said, putting my foot in it again. Kayla rolled her eyes at Nana. "He lies so easily. He's really good at it." They both laughed again. "Anyway, thank you for the

feet, but I had never seen her looking so trim and fit, not even when she was a compliment, Alex," said Kayla. "I'll take it for what it's worth. I don't even consider it too condescending. Oh, you know what I mean."

I decided I'd better change the topic.

"So Nana is fine, and going to live to a hundred?"

"I would expect so" Kayla said

"I would expect so," Kayla said. But Nana frowned. "Why do you

want to get rid of me so soon?" she asked. "What did I do to deserve that?"

I laughed. "Maybe it's because you're a constant pain in my butt. You know that, don't you?"

"Of course I know it," Nana said.
"That's my job in life My reason for

"That's my job in life. My reason for being is to torment you. Don't you know that yet?"

home, back from the wars. I took Kayla and Nana out to the sunporch and played "An American in Paris" for them. That's what I had been not too long ago, but no

more.

finally felt that I was home again, really

And as she said those words, I

About eleven, I walked Kayla outside to her Health van. We stopped and talked for a moment on the front porch.

porch.
"Thanks for coming by to see her," I said.

"You don't have to thank me," Kayla said. "I do it because I want to. It just so happens that I love your grandmother. I love her tremendously. She's one of my guiding lights, my mentor. Has been for

years."

Then Kayla leaned in very quickly, and she kissed me. She held the kiss for a few seconds. When she pulled away she was laughing. "I've wanted to do that for the longest time."

"And?" I asked, more than slightly surprised at what had just happened.
"Now I've done it, Alex.

Interesting."
"Interesting?"
"I have to go. I have to run."
Laughing to herself, Kayla ran out to

Laughing to herself, Kayla ran out to her van.

Interesting.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 92

After some much-needed R & R I went back to work and found that I was still assigned to the extortion/terrorism case, which apparently now involved chasing down whoever was responsible, whoever had the money. I was told that I was picked because I'm relentless.

In a way, I was glad it wasn't over. I was still in touch with several of my contacts on the case: Martin Lodge in England, Sandy Greenberg with Interpol, Etienne Marteau in Paris, but also police and intelligence in Tel Aviv and Frankfurt. Everybody I talked to had possible leads, but no one had anything hot, or even what I would consider

lukewarm.

The Wolf, or maybe al Qaeda, or some other clever, homicidal bastards were out there with close to two billion

were out there with close to two billion dollars in their coffers. Among other things, three city blocks in Paris had been destroyed. Political prisoners had been released. There had to be some slipup, some way to find them, or at least some way to discover who they were.

My second day back, the analyst

My second day back, the analyst Monnie Donnelley and I made a paper connection that interested me enough to drive all the way out to Lexington, Virginia. I arrived at a two-story contemporary on a back road called Red Hawk Lane. A Dodge Durango was

parked in the driveway. A couple of horses grazed in a nearby paddock.

Joe Cahill met me at the door of the

house. The former CIA agent was all smiles, just as I remembered him from past meetings about the Wolf. Joe had told me over the phone that he was eager to help the investigation in any way he could. He invited me inside and had

coffee and a store-bought crumb cake waiting in his den. The room had views of an outlying pasture, a pond, and the Blue Ridge Mountains off in the distance.

"I guess you can tell I miss the job," Joe said. "Some days, anyway. You can

do only so much hunting and fishing. You

fish, Alex? You hunt?"

"I've taken the kids fishing a couple of times," I said. "I hunt some, yeah. Right now, I'm hoping to bag the Wolf. I need your help, though, Joe. I want to go over some old ground. Something has come up."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 93

"All right, you want to talk about him again. How we got the Wolf out of Russia? What happened once he arrived in America? How he disappeared after that? It's a sad but well-known and documented story, Alex. You've seen the files. I know you have. Almost ended my

"Joe, I don't understand why nobody seems to know who he is. What he looks like. His real name. That's the story I've been getting for over a year now, but how can it be? How could we work with England to extricate an important KGB

guy, and not know who he is. Something bad happened in Paris—but nobody

career."

missed so far?"

Joe Cahill spread his large workingman hands, palms up. "Look, I obviously don't have all the pieces, either. It's my understanding that he was undercover when he was inside Russia.

Supposedly, he was a young, very cagey agent, which would mean he's still only in his early forties. But I've also read

knows what. How is it possible? What am I missing? What has everybody

reports that he's in his late fifties or sixties now. That he was actually pretty high up in the KGB when he defected. I've also heard that the Wolf is female. I think he spreads the rumors himself. I'm

almost certain that's what he does."
"Joe, you and your old partner were

his controls once he got here."
"Our boss was Tom Weir, who wasn't the director yet. Actually, the team included three other guys—

Maddock, Boykin, and Graebner. Maybe you should talk to them."

Cahill rose from his easy chair. He

went and opened French doors leading out to a stone patio. A cooling breeze swept into the room.

"I power met him Alex Neither did

"I never met him, Alex. Neither did my partner, Corky Hancock. Or the rest of the team—Jay, Sam, Clark. That's the way it was set up from the beginning. It was the deal he brokered when he came out of Russia. He'd help us bring down the old KGB, name names there, and here in the U.S. But nobody got to see and information that helped bring down the evil empire."

I nodded. "Right, he keeps his promises. But now he's on the loose, and

him. Believe me, he delivered names

he's established his own crime network
—and a whole lot more."

Cahill took a bite of his coffee cake,

then talked with his mouth full. "Apparently, that's exactly what he did. Of course, we had no idea that he would go bad. Neither did the Brits. Maybe Tom Weir did. I don't know."

I needed some air. I got up and walked to the open doors. A couple of horses were hugging a white wooden fence under the shade of oak trees. I turned to face Joe Cahill.

"Okay, so you can't help me with the Wolf. What can you help me with, Joe?" Cahill frowned and looked confused.

"I'm sorry, Alex, not much. I'm an old plow horse, not good for much of anything anymore. Coffee cake's good, right?"

I shook my head. "Not really, Joe. Trust me, store-bought's never the same."

Cahill's face sagged, then he grinned but his eyes weren't smiling. "So now we're gonna be honest, I guess. Why the hell are you here? What's this about? Talk to Uncle Joe. What's going on? I'm kind of lost. You're playing way over my

kind of lost. You're playing way over my head."

I stepped back into the room. "Oh,

you and your old partner can help us a lot—even if you never met him in person, and I'm not so sure that you didn't."

Cahill finally threw up his hands in frustration. "Alex, this is a little crazy,

it's all about the Wolf, Joe. See, I think

you know. I feel like we're running around in circles. I'm too old and ornery for this shit."

"Yeah, well, it's been a tough couple of weeks for everybody. A lot of craziness going around. You don't know

the half of it." But I'd had enough of "Uncle" Joe Cahill's crap. I showed him a photograph.

"Take a good look. This is the

"Take a good look. This is the woman who murdered CIA Director Weir at the Hoover Building."
Cahill shook his head. "Okay. So?"

"Her name is Nikki Williams and she's former army. She operated as a mercenary for a while. A sniper, a good one. Lots of private contracts on her résumé. I know what you're going to say,

"Yeah. So?"

Joe—so?"

you and your partner, Hancock. Your agency shared your files with us, Joe. New era of cooperation. Here's the real twist— I think you hired her to kill Weir.

"Once upon a time, she worked for

"Maybe you did it through Geoffrey Shafer, but you were involved. I think you work for the Wolf. Maybe you always have—maybe that was part of his deal, too." "You're crazy, and you're dead wrong!" Joe Cahill stood up and brushed

crumbs from his trousers. "You know what else, I think you'd better leave now. I'm sorry as hell I invited you into my house. This little talk of ours is over."

house. This little talk of ours is over."
"No, Joe," I said, "actually, it's just getting started."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 94

I made a call on my cell phone. Minutes later, agents from Langley and Quantico swarmed onto the property and arrested Joe Cahill. They cuffed him and dragged him out of his nice, peaceful house in the country.

We had a lead now, maybe a good one.

Joe Cahill was transported to a CIA safe house somewhere in the Alleghenies. The grounds and the home looked ordinary enough: a two-story fieldstone farmhouse surrounded by grapevines and fruit trees, the entryway thick with wisteria. But this wasn't going to be a safe house for Uncle Joe.

The former agent was bound and gagged, then left alone in a small room for several hours.

To think about his future—and his

To think about his future—and his past.

A CIA doctor arrived: a tall, paunchy man who looked to be in his late thirties, horsey, WASPish. His name

was Jay O'Connell. He told us that an experimental truth serum had been approved for use on Cahill. O'Connell explained that variations of the drug were currently being used on terrorist

prisoners at various prisons.

"It's a barbiturate, like sodium amytal and brevital," he said. "All of a sudden the subject will feel slightly drunk, diminished senses. After that, he

well against prodding questions. At least, we hope not. Subjects can react differently. We'll see with this guy. He's older, so I'm fairly confident we'll nail him."

won't be able to defend himself very

asked O'Connell.

"That'd be cardiac arrest. Oh hell, it's a joke. Well, actually. I guess it

"What's the worst we can expect?" I

it's a joke. Well, actually, I guess it isn't."

It was early in the morning when Joe

Cahill was moved out of the small holding room and brought into a larger one in the cellar with no windows. His blindfold and gag were removed, but not the binds around his wrists. We sat him in a straight-backed chair.

before he could tell where he was and who else was in the room with him.
"Disorientation techniques. Won't

Cahill blinked his eyes repeatedly

work worth a crap on me," he said. "This is really dumb. Nonsense. It's horseshit."

"Yes, we think so, too," said Dr. O'Connell. He turned to one of the agents, Larry Ladove. "Roll up his

sleeve for me anyway. There we go. This will pinch. Then it'll sting. Then you'll spill out your guts to us."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 95

For the next three and a half hours, Cahill continued to slur his words badly and to act like a man who had half a dozen drinks or more in him, and was ready for more.

"I know what you guys are doing," Uncle Joe said, and shook a finger at the three of us in the room with him.

"We know what you're doing, too," said the CIA guy, Ladove. "And what you've done."

"Haven't done anything. Innocent until proven guilty. Besides, if you know so much, why are we talking?"

"Joe, where is the Wolf?" I asked him. "What country? Give us

"Don't know," Cahill said, then laughed as if something he'd said was funny. "All these years, I don't know. I

don't. "
"But you've met him?" I said.

"Never seen him. Not once, not even in the beginning. Very smart, clever. Paranoid, maybe. Doesn't miss a trick,

though. Interpol might have seen him during the transport. Tom Weir? The

Brits, maybe. Had him for a while before we got him." We'd already checked with London, but they had nothing substantial about the defection.

And there was nothing about a mistake in Paris.

"How long have you been working

with him?" I asked Cahill.

He looked for an answer on the ceiling. "Working for him, you mean?"

"Yes. How long?"
"Long time. Sold out early in the

started to laugh again. "Lot of us did—CIA, FBI, DEA. So he claims. I believe him."

I said, "He gave you orders to have

game. Jesus, long time ago." Cahill

Thomas Weir killed. You already told us that." Which he hadn't.

"Okay" he said "If I did I did

"Okay," he said. "If I did, I did. Whatever the hell you say."

"Why did he want Thomas Weir killed?" I continued. "Why Weir? What

happened between them?"
"Doesn't work that way. You just get

But there was something between him and Weir—bad blood.

"Anyway, he sure as hell never

your job. You never see the whole plan.

contacted me. Always my partner. Always Hancock. He's the one who got the Wolf out of Russia. Corky, the Germans, the Brits. I told you that,

right?" Cahill said, then winked at us. "This stuff is good. Truth serum. Drink the grape juice, boys." He looked over at O'Connell. "You, too, Dr. Mengele.

Drink the fucking grape and the truth will

set you free."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 96

Had we gotten the truth out of Joe Cahill? Was there anything to his druginduced ramblings?

Corky Hancock? The Germans, the Brits? Thomas Weir?

Somebody had to know something about the Wolf. Where he was. Who he was. What he might be up to next.

So I was on the road again, tracking down the Wolf. Joe Cahill's partner had moved out to the central Idaho Rockies after he had taken early retirement. He lived on the outskirts of Hailey in the Wood River Valley, about a dozen miles south of Sun Valley. Not a bad life for a former spook.

hunter and fisherman, it seemed. Silver Creek Preserve, a world-famous catchand-release fishing area, was nearby.

"We're not going to bust in on Hancock. We'll keep him under surveillance. Try to see what he's up to.

He's off in the mountains, hunting, right now. We'll run by his place. Let you have a look," said the local senior agent, a young Turk named Ned Rust.

As we drove from the airport to

Hailey we passed through what the Bureau driver described as "high desert." Hancock, like Joe Cahill, was a

"Hancock is an expert shot with a rifle, by the way. Thought I'd mention that." We drove up into the hills, where several of the larger houses seemed to "There have been avalanches in the area recently," Rust said as we drove. He was just chock full of information. "Might see some wild horses. Or Bruce Willis. Demi and Ashton and the kids.

Anyway, there's Hancock's house up ahead. Exterior's river rock. Popular around here. Lot of house for a retired

agent with no family."

be on five-to-ten-acre lots. Some homes had well-manicured lawns, which looked unnaturally green in contrast to the ashen hills, which, of course, were

spend on himself," I said.

The house was large all right, and handsome, with spectacular views in

"He's probably got some money to

barn that was bigger than my house, and a couple of horses grazing nearby. No Corky Hancock, though; he was off hunting.

for the next few days. I was briefed by the senior agent in charge, a man named

three directions. There was a detached

Well, so was I.

Nothing much happened in Hailey

William Koch. The CIA had also sent a heavy from Washington, Bridget Rooney. Hancock returned from his hunting outing, and we watched his every move. Static surveillance was set up by an operations group that had been flown in from Quantico. There was a mobile team whenever Hancock left the house. We were taking him very

there somewhere, with close to two billion dollars. In winnings. But maybe we finally had a way to

seriously. After all, the Wolf was out

track him: the CIA agent who brought him out of Russia. And maybe it was all connected to whatever had happened between the Wolf and Thomas Weir.

The mistake in Paris.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 97

It just wasn't going to happen overnight. Or the next night. Or the one after that.

On Friday I got permission to take a trip out to Seattle to visit my boy. I called Christine, who said that it would be fine and that Alex would be happy to see me—and so would she. I'd noticed the edge was gone from Christine's voice when we talked these days; sometimes I could even remember how it had been between us. I wasn't sure that was a good thing, though.

I arrived at her house in the late morning and was struck again by what a warm and charming place it was. The picket fence and matching handrails hugging the stone steps leading to the front door; rosemary, thyme, and mint filled the herb garden. Everything just so.

Christine answered the bell herself,

house and the yard were very Christine: cozy and light, with the familiar white

tried not to, I couldn't help thinking about the way things might have been if I hadn't been a homicide cop and my life as a detective hadn't violently derailed the two of us.

I was surprised that she was home,

with Alex in her arms. As much as I

and she must have recognized the look in my eyes.

"I won't bite you, Alex, I promise. I

brought Alex back from preschool to be with you," she said. Then she handed over the Boy, and he was all I wanted to think about right then.

"Hello, Dada," he said, and laughed

shyly, which is his way at first. I smiled back. A woman I know in the D.C. area calls me "a saint," and she doesn't mean it as a compliment. I'm not, not even close, but I have learned to make the best of things. My guess is that she hasn't.

"You're such a big boy," I said, expressing my surprise, and I suppose, my pride and delight in my son. "How old are you now? Six? Eight? Twelve years old?" I asked.

"I'm two, almost three," he said, and

laughed at my joke. He always gets me, at least he seems to.

"He's been talking about seeing you

all morning, Alex. He kept saying, 'Today's Daddy day,'" Christine said. "You two have fun together." Then she

did something that surprised me: she leaned in and kissed my cheek. That kind of threw me. I may be cautious, even a little paranoid, but I'm not immune. First

Kayla Coles—and now Christine. Maybe I looked as though I needed a little TLC. That was probably it.

Well, Alex and I did have some good times together. I acted as if Seattle were our hometown, and I went with it.

were our hometown, and I went with it. First we rode over to the Fremont area, where I had visited a retired detective

full of older buildings, lots of vintage clothing and furniture shops, character, if such a worthy trait can actually be traced to architecture and style. A lot of people seem to think it can, but I'm not so sure.

When we got there, Little Alex and I

friend a few years back. Fremont was

shared a scone with butter and blackberry jam from the Touchstone Bakery. We continued on our walking tour, and closely examined the fifty-fivefoot-tall Fremont Rocket attached to one of the local stores. Then I bought Alex a tie-dyed kite, and we took it for a test flight at Gas Works Park, which had a view of Lake Union and downtown Seattle. Seattle has parks galore. It's one of the things I like so much about the

wondered why I was entertaining that line of thought at all. Because Christine had given me a quick little peck on the cheek? Was I that starved for affection? Pitiful. We did some more exploring, and

city. I wondered if I could ever live out here and imagined that I could, and then I

Fremont Troll, a large sculpture that reminded me of the singer Joe Cocker clutching a Volkswagen Bug in one hand. Finally we had a late lunch—organic, of course—a roasted vegetable salad, plus peanut butter and jelly on Ezekiel bread.

checked out the sculpture garden and the

"Life is pretty good out here, huh, buddy?" I said as we munched our food

When in Rome, and all that.

together. "This is the best, little guy."

Alex Junior nodded that it was good, but then he stared up at me all wide-eyed and innocent, and asked, "When are you coming home, Daddy?"

Oh man, oh man. When am I coming home?

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 98

Christine had asked that I have Alex home before six, and I did as I'd promised. I am so responsible, so Alex, it drives me a little crazy sometimes. She was waiting for us on the porch, in a bright blue dress and heels, and handled everything as well as I could have expected her to. She smiled warmly when she saw us, and hugged Alex against her long legs when he ran up to her squealing, "Mommy!"

"You two look like you had some fun," she said as she stroked the top of the Big Boy's head. "That's nice. I knew you would. Alex, Daddy has to go to his house now. Back to Washington, D.C.

You and I have to go to Theo's for dinner."

Tears filled his eyes. "I don't want

Daddy to go," he protested.

"I know, but he has to, sweetheart.

Daddy has to go to work. Give him a

Daddy has to go to work. Give him a hug. He'll come visit again."

"I will. Of course I will," I said,

wondering who Theo was. "I'll always come see you."

Alex ran into my arms, and I loved

having him close and didn't want to let him go. I loved the smell of him, his touch, the feeling of his little heart beating. But I also didn't want him to feel the separation that was already making my heart ache.

"I'll be back real soon," I said.

I'm not looking."

And Alex whispered, "Please don't go away, Daddy. Please don't go."

"Soon as I can. Don't get too big when

He kept repeating it over and over

until I was inside my rental car and driving away, waving back to my son, who kept getting smaller and smaller, until he disappeared as I turned the

until he disappeared as I turned the corner of his street. I could still feel Alex's little body pressing against mine. I can still feel it now.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 99

A little before eight that night I sat alone at the dimly lit bar inside the Kingfish Café on Nineteenth and Mercer in Seattle. I was lost in thoughts about my youngest son—all of my children, really—when Jamilla rolled into the restaurant.

She had on a long black leather car

coat, with a dark blouse and black skirt, and she smiled brilliantly when she saw me sitting there at the bar, maybe looking as good to her as she did to me. Maybe. The thing about Jamilla is that she's pretty but doesn't seem to know it, at least to believe it. I had mentioned I was coming to Seattle, and Jam said she'd fly

up to have dinner with me.

At first I hadn't been sure it was a good idea, but that was wrong, all

wrong. I was incredibly happy to see her, especially after leaving Alex. "You look good, Sugar," she

whispered against my cheek. "But you do seem a little beat-up, darling. You're working too hard. Burning the candle down."

"I feel a lot better right now," I told her. "You look good enough for both of us."

"I do? Well, thank you for saying that. Believe me, I needed to hear it."

The Kingfish, as it turned out, was a totally democratic restaurant: no reservations, but we were seated quickly

at a nice table along the wall. We ordered drinks and food, but mostly we were there to hold hands and talk about everything that was going on in our lives.

"This thing with Little Alex," I told

Jamilla about midway through dinner, "it's the worst torture for me. Goes against who I am, everything I learned from Nana. I can't stand to leave him here."

Jamilla frowned and seemed angry. "Doesn't she treat him well?"

"Oh no, no, Christine is a good mother. It's the separation that kills me. I love that little boy, and I miss him so much every day I'm away from him. I miss the way he talks, walks, thinks, pals, Jam." "And so," Jamilla said, holding my eyes with hers, "you escape into your work."

tells bad jokes, listens to mine. We're

"And so"—I nodded—"I do. But that's a whole 'nother story. Hey, let's get out of here."

"What do you have in mind, Agent Cross?"

"Nothing illegal, Inspector Hughes."

"Hmmm. Really? Well, that's a shame."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 100

You've heard the saying get a room? Well, I already had one at the Fairmont Olympic on University across from Ranier Square, and I couldn't wait to get there. Neither of us could. Jamilla whistled under her breath as we walked into the impressive lobby. She stared up at the engraved ceiling, which must have been forty feet high. There was an actual hush inside the large, overdecorated room at a little past ten when we arrived.

"Italian Renaissance decor, big ol' antique chandeliers, five stars, five diamonds. I'm wonderfully impressed," Jam said, grinning. As always, her enthusiasm was exhilarating.
"Every once in a while you just have to build in a treat, you know."

"This is definitely a treat, Alex,"

Jamilla said, and gave me a quick kiss in the lobby. "I'm really happy you're here. And that I'm here, too. I like us a lot." It kept getting better from there. Our

room was on the tenth floor and it was everything it needed to be—bright, airy, plush, with a king-size bed. We even had a view of Elliott Bay with Bainbridge Island in the distance, and a ferry just leaving the waterfront in the foreground. The sights and scenes couldn't have been any better if I'd planned them out in elaborate detail, which maybe, just maybe, I had.

didn't bother to remove the comforter/duvet. We just fell onto it, laughing and talking, happy to be there together, realizing how much we'd missed each other.

"Let me make you a little more comfortable, Alex," Jam whispered as she pulled my shirt out of my pants. "How's that? Better?"

"And I'll do the same for you. Only

"Well, yes, I do like that tat of

fair," I said to her. "Tit for tat."

yours."

About that king-size bed at the

Fairmont Olympic. It was covered with a gold-and-green-striped comforter—a duvet?—I'm always slightly confused about what distinguishes the two. We

and she continued unbuttoning my shirt. Neither of us was in a hurry. We knew better than to rush any of this. The whole idea was to make it last, to pay attention

I began to unbutton Jamilla's blouse

to each detail, each button, the feel of the fabric, the tiny bumps of anticipation on Jamilla's skin, and on mine, the difficulty catching our breath, the tingle in our bodies, the electricity, sparks, whatever goodness came our way that night.

"You've been practicing," she whispered, and she was already a little short of breath. I liked that.

I laughed. "Uh-uh. Actually, I've been practicing the art of anticipation." "Like this next button?" she asked. "Beautiful, isn't it?"

"And the one after that?" "I don't know how much more of this

I can take, Jamilla. I'm not kidding." "We'll have to see. We'll just have to

see. I'm not kidding, either." When Jamilla's blouse and my shirt

were undone, we slowly pulled them off.

Meanwhile, we kept kissing, tickling, scratching, nuzzling, ever so slowly. She was wearing perfume and I recognized it as Calèche Eau Delicate. She knew I liked the scent. Jamilla loved a light scratch all over her body so that's what I

did next. First the shoulders and back, then her arms, her beautiful face, the long legs, her feet, then back up her legs again.

"You're getting warm . . . warmer,"

Then we slid back off the bed and stood together, swaying and touching.

she sighed, and laughed very deep in her

Finally I took off her bra and held her breasts in my hands. "Like I said, I don't know how much more of this I can take."

that it hurt. I slid down and knelt on the Oriental rug. I kissed Jamilla down

I didn't, either. I was hard, so hard

there. She was strong and confident, and maybe that's why I liked kneeling before her like this. In awe? Out of respect? Something like that.

"Okay?" I whispered.

"Okay. Whatever you say. I'm your slave. Your master? A little of each?"

Finally I pushed myself up again.

I went inside Jamilla while we were still standing, dancing in place, but then we tilted down and dropped onto the bed. I was lost in the moment, lost in Jamilla Hughes, and that was exactly where I needed to be. She was making

"I missed being with you," I whispered. "I missed your smile, the sound of your voice, everything." "Ditto," she said, and laughed. "But

these tiny sighs and gasps that I loved.

especially that tat of yours." Moments later, five, maybe ten minutes, the phone on the nightstand

began to ring. For once, I did the right thing—I

knocked the damn thing onto the floor, then covered it with a pillow. If it was



Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 101

The next morning I headed back to the Idaho Rockies. Jamilla and I shared a cab out to the airport, then took separate planes going in different directions. "Big mistake. Dumb move," she told me before we parted. "You should just fly to San Francisco with me.

You need some extended R and R." I already knew that.

But it wasn't going to be. Corky Hancock was the biggest lead we had, and the surveillance on him had been tightening. There was nowhere Hancock could go in the state of Idaho and not be watched, or at least listened to. There was surveillance on his house, the alone barn. We had four mobile teams on him, with four more in the wings if needed. Since I'd left, aerial surveillance had been added to the mix. In Idaho, I attended a meeting of

more than two dozen agents assigned to the detail. The meeting was held in a

surrounding acreage, even the stand-

small movie house in Sun Valley. The movie 21 Grams with Sean Penn and Naomi Watts was playing there in the evenings, but not during the day.

Senior Agent William Koch stood in front of us. Tall and gangly, impressive in his way, he wore a chambray shirt,

jeans, scuffed black cowboy boots. He played the local guy to a T, but he was nobody's fool and he wanted us to know

counterpart, Bridget Rooney, confident, dark-haired woman who was smarter than a whip. "I'll make this pretty simple for everybody. Either Hancock knows we're here or he's just unbelievably careful by nature," said Koch. "He hasn't talked to anybody since we got here. He's been online—eBay for fishing rods, a couple of porn sites, a fantasy baseball league. He has a girlfriend named Coral Lee, who lives nearby in Ketchum. Asian

it. The same was true for his CIA

American girl. Coral is definitely a good looker. Corky isn't. We figured he probably spends lots of money on her, and it turns out, he does. Slightly less than two hundred thousand so far this year. Trips, jewelry, one of those cute little Lexus convertibles the gals like."

Koch paused and looked around the

room. "That's about it. Except we know that Hancock is connected to the Wolf and that he's been paid a lot of money for his services. So at twelve hundred

hours, we're going in to take a look for ourselves inside the house. So tired," Agent Koch said in a singsong. "Tired of waiting."

There were smiles around the room, even from those who didn't get the reference to the Kinks song. Somebody

patted me on the shoulder, as though I had something to do with the decision that must have come down from

Washington.

"Not me." I turned and shrugged at the agent congratulating me. "I'm just a soldier here."

The team going inside Hancock's

place was mostly FBI, but there was a handful of CIA agents, too, led by Rooney. The CIA was in Idaho as a courtesy, partly because of the new working relationship that existed

between the two agencies, but mostly because Hancock was directly involved in the murder of Thomas Weir, one of theirs. But I doubted they wanted to take Hancock down any more than I did. I wanted the Wolf, and somehow, somewhere, I was going to get him. At least, that was what I needed to think.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 102

Koch and Rooney were in charge, and they finally gave us the go. At the appointed hour, we swarmed all over the Hancock house. FBI-emblazoned shirts and windbreakers were everywhere. Probably scared off a few deer and jackrabbits, even though not a single shot was fired.

Hancock was in bed with his girlfriend. He was sixty-four years old; Coral was supposed to be twenty-six. Lustrous black hair, good figure, lots and lots of rings and things, slept in the nude, on her back. Hancock at least had the decency to wear a Utah Jazz sweatshirt and sleep in a fetal position.

He began to shout at us, which was actually kind of ironic and funny. "What the hell is this shit? Get out of my damn house!"

But he forgot to look surprised, or he

just wasn't a good actor. Either way, I got the feeling that he knew we were coming. How? Because he'd spotted us over the past few days? Or had Hancock been warned by someone in one of the

cooperating agencies? Did the Wolf

know we were onto Hancock?

During the first couple of hours of interviews, we tried Dr. O'Connell's truth serum on Hancock. It didn't work as well on him as it had with Joe Cahill.

well on him as it had with Joe Cahill. He got happy and high, but he just sat back and went with it. Didn't tell us much, wouldn't even confirm things that Cahill had already confessed. Meanwhile, a search of the house,

barn, and sixty acres of grounds was going on. Hancock owned an Aston

Martin convertible—and the Wolf loved fast cars—but nothing else even vaguely suspicious turned up. Not for three whole days, during which nearly a hundred agents combed every square

inch of the ranch. During that time, half a dozen computer experts—including loaners from Intel and IBM—tried to break into Hancock's two computers. They finally concluded that he'd had experts put up extra security to protect whatever was inside.

There was nothing to do but wait

direction for my life that made some sense to me. I didn't do real well, but the fresh mountain air was a nice treat for my lungs.

When a computer breakthrough finally came, there wasn't much to go on. No direct link to the Wolf or to anyone else who seemed suspicious to us, at

The next day, though, a hacker from

our offices in Austin, Texas, found a file inside an encrypted file. It contained regular communication with a bank in

least not at first.

around some more. I read every magazine and newspaper in Hancock's house, including several back issues of the Idaho Mountain Express. I went for long walks and tried to figure out a in Switzerland.

And suddenly we didn't just suspect, we knew that Hancock had a lot of

Zurich. Actually, with a couple of banks

money. Over six million. At least that much. Which was the best news we'd had in a long while.

So off to Zurich we went, at least for a day or two. I didn't expect to find the Wolf there. But you never know. And I'd never been to Switzerland. Jannie begged me to bring back chocolate, a suitcase full of the stuff, and I promised I would. A whole suitcase full of Swiss chocolate, sweetheart. Least I can do for missing most of your ninth year.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 103

If I were the Wolf, this would be a good place to live. Zurich is a beautiful, amazingly clean city on the lake—the Zürichsee—with lovely fragrant shade trees and wide, winding sidewalks along the water, and fresh mountain air meant to be breathed in deeply. When I arrived, a storm was imminent and the air smelled like brass. The exterior of a majority of the buildings were in light shades, sand and white, and several were adorned with Swiss flags twisting in the blustery wind off the lake.

As I drove into the city I noticed trolley tracks everywhere with heavy-looking wires hanging overhead. The

fiberglass cows painted with Alpine scenes, which reminded me of Little Alex's favorite toy, Moo. What was I going to do about Alex? What could I do?

The Zurich Bank was a sixties-

looking building, glass-and-steel front, situated very close to the lake. Sandy Greenberg met me outside. She was

power of the old. Also several life-size

wearing a gray suit, had a black handbag slung over her shoulder, and looked as though maybe she worked inside the bank instead of for Interpol. "You ever been to Zurich, Alex?" Sandy asked as she gave me a hug and

"Never. Had one of their

kiss on both cheeks.

multipurpose knives once when I was ten or eleven." "Alex, we have to eat a meal here. Promise me. Let's go inside now.

They're waiting for us, and they don't like to wait in Zurich. Especially the bankers."

The inside of the Zurich Bank was expensive-looking, highly polished, wood paneling everywhere, as spotless

as a hospital operating room. The teller area was natural stone, with more wood

paneling. The tellers were efficient and professional-looking, and they whispered to one another. The bank's branding was understated, but there was a great deal of modern art on the wall. I

thought that I understood: the art was the

bank's branding.

"Zurich has always been a haven for avant-garde intellectuals, cultured

types," Sandy said, and didn't whisper. "The Dada movement was born here.

Wagner, Strauss, Jung all lived here."

"James Joyce wrote Ulysses in Zurich," I said, and winked at her.

Sandy laughed. "I forgot, you're a closet intellectual."

We were escorted to the bank president's office, which had a serious look. Neat as a pin, too. Only one

look. Neat as a pin, too. Only one transaction on the desk blotter, everything else filed away.

Sandy handed Mr. Delmar Pomeroy an envelope. "A signed warrant," she said. "The account number is 616479Q."

arranged," Herr Pomeroy said to us. That was all. Then his warrant officer took us to look at the transactions in and out of account number 616479Q. So

much for the secrecy and security of Swiss banks. Everything has been

promptly arranged.

"Everything has been promptly

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 104

This was feeling more like an efficient, orderly police investigation now. Even though I knew it really wasn't. Sandy, two of her agents from Interpol, and I got to look through all of Corky Hancock's transactions in a small, windowless room somewhere deep in the basement of the Zurich Bank. The former CIA agent's account had grown from two hundred thousand U.S. dollars to slightly over six million. Youza.

The latest, and largest, deposits totaled three and a half million and had come in four installments this year.

The source of the payment was an account in the name of Y. Jikhomirov. It

all of the records. There were more than a hundred pages going all the way back to '91. The year the Wolf had been brought out of Russia. Coincidence? I didn't believe in them. Not anymore.

took us a couple of hours to track down

from the Jikhomirov account. They included payments to a company that leased private jets; regular air travel with British Airways and Air France;

hotels: Claridge's, the Bel-Air in L.A.,

We carefully examined withdrawals

the Sherry-Netherland in New York, the Four Seasons in Chicago and Maui. There were wire transfers to America, South Africa, Australia, Paris, Tel Aviv.

The trail of a Wolf?

And an entry that particularly caught

"The Wolf is supposed to be a sports car enthusiast," I said to Sandy. "Maybe the cars mean something. Maybe we're closer than we suspect. What do you think?"

She nodded agreement. "Yes, I think we should visit Riviera Motors in Nice.

Nice is nice. But first, Alex, lunch in

After my bad Swiss Army knife joke."

good idea. Sandy chose the Veltliner

"No, I think you made me promise.

I was hungry anyway, so it seemed a

Zurich. I made you a promise."

my interest—the purchase of four expensive sports cars in France, all from a dealership in Nice, Riviera Motors. A Lotus, a special-edition Jaguar, and two

Aston Martins

Veltliner Keller had been a restaurant since 1551, a long time for any business to survive. So we forgot about police work for an hour and a half. We dined

on barley soup, zuppe engadinese; a casserole, veltliner topf; and very good wine. Everything was just so: crisp white linens and napkins, roses in sterling vases, crystal salt and pepper

As we entered, she explained that

Keller, one of her favorites—a restaurant she thought I would

appreciate.

shakers.

"This is one of your better ideas," I told Sandy near the end of the meal. "A nice break in the action."

"It's called lunch, Alex. You have to

with your friend, Jamilla. You're working too hard."

"It shows, I guess."

"No, actually you look as good as

try it more. You should come to Europe

ever. You're holding up better than Denzel—in his latest movies, anyway. Somehow you persevere. I don't know how, but you do. But I can tell that you're

twisted up inside. Eat, relax, then we'll go to Nice and check out some sports

cars. It will be like a holiday. Maybe we'll even catch a killer. Finish your wine, Alex."

"Right," I said, "and then I have to

buy some chocolate for Jannie. A suitcase full. I made another promise."
"Didn't you promise to catch the

Wolf?" Sandy asked. "Yeah, that too."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 105

Next stop, a luxury-car dealership in Nice. I felt as if I were in an Alfred Hitchcock movie.

The owner of Riviera Motors, the "concessionnaire exclusif Jaguar, Aston Martin, Lotus," appeared to like drama, too, at least in a design sense. To that effect, a long row of gleaming black cars was displayed in the showroom. The cars were clearly visible from the street through monumental bay windows. The shiny black machines cut a startling contrast to a spotless white floor.

"What do you think?" Sandy asked as we climbed out of our rented Peugeot, which we had parked across the street from the dealership.

"I think I need a new car," I said to her. "And I know the Wolf likes fancy

sports cars."

We went inside and stopped at the reception desk in front. Behind it was an elegant reception person, well tanned with a bleached and ironed ponytail. She was checking Sandy and me out: Both

these people?

"We're here to see Monsieur
Garnier," Sandy said to the woman in
French

over six feet; ebony and ivory. Who are

"You have an appointment with Monsieur, madame?"

"We do indeed. Interpol and the FBI, respectively—and respectfully, I might

add. Monsieur Garnier is expecting us, I believe. We're here on important business."

While we waited, I continued to take

in the place. The expensive cars were precisely parked in a herringbone pattern, interspersed with voluminous potted plants. In an adjacent service atelier, mechanics in matching Jaguargreen jumpsuits worked with pristine tools.

The manager of the car dealership appeared after a couple of minutes' wait. He was dressed in a fashionable gray suit, but not too flashy, just clearly expensive and right.

expensive and right.

"You've come about a couple of Aston Martins, a Jaguar, a Lotus?" he

"Something like that, monsieur," Sandy told him. "Let's go up to your office. We wouldn't want to hurt

asked

business by talking down here in the showroom." The manager smiled. "Oh, believe

me, madame, our business is bulletproof." "We'll see about that," I told him in

French. "Or maybe a better way of putting it: let's try and keep it that way.

This is a murder investigation."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 106

The manager suddenly became extremely polite and cooperative. The four luxury cars in question had been purchased by an M. Aglionby, who apparently had a home nearby on the beautiful peninsula, Cap-Ferrat, just east of Nice. Monsieur Garnier told us it was "off the Basse Corniche, the main coastal road to Monaco. You can't miss it. And you won't miss the Aglionby estate."

"To Catch a Thief," Sandy said as we sped along toward Cap-Ferrat about two hours later. We had lost a little time calling in backup.

"Actually, the most memorable shots

murderer without any conscience," I said, "not a witty and charming cat burglar like Cary Grant was in the flick."

"This is true, too. Keep me focused,

Alex. I could easily get distracted here," Sandy said. But I knew she was focused—always. That's why we got along so

The Aglionby estate was located on

"Also, we're here to catch a mass

dangerous-looking.

well.

in the Hitchcock movie were filmed up there," Sandy went on. She pointed toward a parallel road winding along the cliffs; it was at least a hundred yards higher than the one we were driving on. In other words, very high up, and

behind high stucco and rock walls as we rode along D125, also known as boulevard Circulaire. Half a dozen cars and vans followed us, also catching the sights, no doubt: a shiny blue Rolls-Royce convertible easing out of one of the estates, with a blonde in sunglasses and a kerchief behind the wheel; darkglassed tourists catching rays on the terrace of the Grand Hôtel du Cap-Ferrat; a bathing pool dug into solid rock at Piscine de Sun beach. "You think this is a fool's errand, Alex?" Sandy asked. "It's what we do. Hit and miss, hunt

the west side of Cap-Ferrat, in Villefranche-sur-Mer. There were glimpses of villas and gardens hidden I was hopeful. We had found an awful lot of money in the account of Corky Hancock, and most of it had come in recently. But how much did he really

and peck. I feel good about this one. It has to be something. Monsieur Aglionby

has to be connected somehow."

know about the Wolf? How much did anyone know?

Then we saw the estate we were looking for and Sandy drays next. "

looking for—and Sandy drove past. "Got you, you bastard," she said. "Aglionby? The Wolf? Why not?"

"Whoever lives back there is

certainly loaded. Jesus, how much is enough?"

"When you have a billion dollars or

so, this is rather modest, Alex. It's not a

Riviera, London, Paris, Aspen."

"If you say so. I've never had a

question of a house—it's houses. The

billion myself. Or a villa on the Riviera."

The place in question was a sun-

drenched, Mediterranean-style mansion, creamy yellow with white detailing; it

had gleaming balustrades and porticos, shutters that the staff apparently closed to the midday sun. Or maybe the people inside just didn't want to be seen? Four stories, thirty-plus rooms—as cozy as Versailles.

But for now all we were interested

in was a peek. As we had planned earlier, we reconnoitered at a small hotel just up the coast. The decision was the south side. It was vacant now, except for a large staff. We would dress and pose as gardeners and household help, starting tomorrow morning.

made by local police officials to use the estate bordering the Aglionby place on

Sandy and I listened to the plan as it was laid out, step by step. We looked at each other, shook our heads. Not this

time. I spoke. "We're going in tonight," I announced. "With or without your help."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 107

The decision to go right away was backed enthusiastically by Interpol, and even by the French in Paris, who were in close contact with Washington and wanted the murderous Wolf as badly as the rest of the world did, maybe more. For a change, everything happened very quickly that afternoon and through the

quickly that afternoon and through the early evening. I was going to be part of the assault, and so was Sandy.

The attack was planned as if the

Wolf was definitely inside the villa. Seven two-person teams of snipers were deployed on all sides of the estate, which were designated as white (north), red (east), black (south), and green

(west). Every door and window was covered, and each of the snipers had a specific number of targets. They were closest to the estate. Our eyes and ears.

So far, they weren't seeing any sign

that we'd been spotted. While the snipers moved into position, the rest of us—Interpol, the FBI, the French army and police strapped on war gear: black Nomex flight suits, body armor, handguns, MP-5 submachine guns. Three helicopters were waiting less than a mile away and would be used during the assault. We were ready for the green light, but some of the more jaded among us expected a last-minute delay for politics, cold feet

at the command level, something

stomach beside Sandy Greenberg. We were less than a hundred yards from the main house. Starting to feel the iitters. At

I lay flat on the ground on my

unforeseen to get in the way.

main house. Starting to feel the jitters. At least, I was. The Wolf could be inside this house; maybe he was Aglionby.

Some lights were on inside, but we

seldom saw anyone at the windows past midnight. Security was modest on the grounds, just a couple of guards.

"Awfully quiet," said Sandy. "I don't know if I like this, Alex. Security's light."

"It's almost two in the morning."
"You surprised that we're going in?"

"You surprised that we're going in?" Sandy asked.

I smiled. " Are we going in? No, I'm

not surprised. Remember, the French want the Wolf. Maybe even more than we do." Then the signal came to go! Sandy

and I were part of the second assault team, and we ran toward the house about forty-five seconds after the first wave.

We entered through the back—black. The kitchen, to be exact. Somebody had switched on the overheads. A guard lay on the floor, his

hands cuffed behind his head. Highly polished marble was everywhere, four stoves at the center of the room. I noticed a large glass bowl on a table. I took a peek at what looked like dark noses inside.

Figs, I finally realized, smiling to

myself.

Then Sandy and I were running down a long hallway. No gunshots had been

fired inside the house yet. Lots of other noise, though.

We came to the formal living room

of diplomatic proportions: chandeliers dangled over our head, polished-marble floor, half a dozen dark and solemn paintings by French and Dutch masters.

No Wolf so far. No sign of him. "This for entertaining, or signing treaties?" Sandy asked me. "Alex, why aren't they fighting back? What's going

on? Is he here?"

We climbed a winding staircase and saw French soldiers leading men and women out of the bedrooms. Most were

Nobody looked very sexy, but they certainly looked surprised.

I didn't see anybody who might be the Wolf, but how could I tell for certain

in their underwear; a few were naked.

the Wolf, but how could I tell for certain what the Wolf looked like? How could anybody?

The interrogations began

Where is the Wolf? . . . Who is Aglionby? . . . The entire house was searched a

immediately right there in the hallways.

second time, then a third.

Marcel Aglionby wasn't at the house,

we were told by several of the guests. He was on business in New York. One of his daughters was present; this was her party, her guests, her friends—

her age. Her father was a respected banker, she swore to us. No way was he a criminal, no way was he the Wolf.

So is he the Wolf's banker? And where does that lead us?

I hated to think it but I couldn't halp

though some of them looked to be twice

I hated to think it, but I couldn't help myself: The Wolf wins again.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 108

We searched the place one more time and, over the threats of the daughter, started to take it apart, piece by piece.

I had to say the house was amazing, filled with antiques and artwork. Sandy thought that Aglionby might be trying to emulate the nearby La Fiorentina, which has been called the most beautiful house in the world. The banker certainly had expensive taste, and could afford to indulge them. Hand-painted Louis XVI pieces were everywhere, as were Louis XV chandeliers; antique Turkish carpets; Chinese screens and panels; tapestries; paintings, classical and modern, on nearly every wall. Works by Fragonard, Goya, Pieter Brueghel. All of it financed by the Wolf? Why not? He has over two billion to throw around.

We assembled the "suspects" in the

billiards room, which had three billiards tables and nearly as many plush sofas as the living room. The same tailored formality. Did anyone here know anything about the Wolf? It didn't look

them might know Paris and Nicky Hilton.
"Does anyone want to speak for the group?" the French police commander

that way to me. More likely, some of

addressed them.

No one volunteered; no one answered any questions. Either they

didn't know or they had been told not to say.

"All right, then, let's separate them.

We'll begin the interviews now. Someone will talk," the commander warned

warned.

Since I hadn't been asked to participate in the interrogations, I wandered out onto the grounds and

walked down toward the water. Had we been given another false lead to follow? The Wolf's game-playing, his strategies and counterstrategies, had been relentless from the beginning. Why

should it stop now?

There was a large—actually, very long—wooden boathouse at the water's edge. It stood maybe a hundred yards

boathouse into a garage to house a collection of more than thirty very expensive sports cars and luxury sedans. Maybe this was finally something.

from the main house. But what was this? Somebody had transformed the old

Evidence that the Wolf might have used this estate. Or was it another ruse, a tease?

I was standing between the

I was standing between the boathouse and the water when all hell broke loose.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 109

All he had was his piece of the puzzle, his part in this terrible mission. But it was more than enough. Bari Naffis knew that there had been an incursion at the estate in Villefranche-sur-Mer and that within the hour people would die because of it, including friends of his and one girl he'd slept with, a fashion model from Hamburg. Eye candy to be sure, but very precious stuff.

The French army and police had already taken over the mansion. And now it was Bari's turn to go to work, to do his job. He didn't know why this had to happen, only that it did.

As he turned onto the D125, it

late. But he had his orders. Someone had obviously foreseen that this would happen.

The Wolf had known it was coming, hadn't ha? He had ever in the healt of his

seemed to him that he was already too

hadn't he? He had eyes in the back of his head. Eyes everywhere! What a scary bastard that one was.

That was all that Bari Naffis knew—

been well paid in advance, even if this made little sense to him and was highly distasteful. Why kill and maim so many?

Half an hour before, he'd received a

and all he cared about right now. He had

Half an hour before, he'd received a radio signal from the main house; the noise had awakened him from a sound sleep in his hotel room.

He jumped from bed, dressed, then

hurried to a prearranged position on an estate to the north. He tried not to think about his friends and a lover inside the house. Maybe she would survive somehow.

No matter. He wasn't going to cross the Wolf over some girl. Bari ran

through the woods and thick brush cover. He was carrying a Man Portable Air Defense System, about as ungainly a weapon as there was. The missile launcher was five feet in length, a little over thirty-five pounds. Still, it was extremely well balanced and equipped with a rifle-style pistol grip and forestock. It fired an FIM-92A Stinger missile, and there were two other operators in the woods besides himself. Each of them had his little bit of work to do, his piece of the whole.

Three professional killers on the

move at that very moment, maybe feeling the same misgivings he had.

A trap had been set for the police.

A terrible death trap for everybody

in that house. Police killed as well. What a mess.

only about fifteen hundred feet from the main house, Bari hoisted the ungainly tube up onto his shoulder. He set his right hand on the pistol grip and sighted the weapon with his left. He held the launcher like a conventional rifle, though

When he was in his final position,

it was far from conventional.

He easily found his target in the

viewfinder. He could hardly miss hitting a house. Then he waited for a final command in his earphones. God, he didn't like this! He pictured

the astonishingly pretty girl from Hamburg. Jeri was her name. So sweet, and what a perfect body. He waited, half hoping the signal wouldn't come. For Jeri's sake, for the sake of everyone inside.

But there it was! Electronic. Impersonal as a stranger's funeral. A whistling sound between his ears.

Two short, one long.

He took a deep breath, slowly exhaled. Then, reluctantly, he squeezed the trigger.

Bari felt a slight recoil, less than a

The launch engine inside the weapon ignited. The first-stage engine propelled

the missile only about twenty to thirty

feet, at which point it was safe for the secondary propulsion system to engage.

His eyes followed a vapor trail of

solid rocket-fuel exhaust. The Stinger was on its way to the target. He heard a low roar as the missile accelerated to

1,500 miles per hour. Be safe, Jeri.

rifle's, actually.

The Stinger struck the estate broadside—a near perfect hit.

He was already reloading for the

He was already reloading for the next shot.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 110

There were loud whooshing noises, and then fiery, hellish explosions everywhere I looked. Chaos reigned everywhere. And death as well.

French police and army personnel were frantically running for cover. A rocket or missile had struck the northern roofs of the villa, tossing slate, wood, and bricks from a chimney high into the air. Then a second missile struck. A third was only seconds behind.

I had started racing back toward the main house when I got another surprise out of nowhere.

A side door of the boathouse flew open and a dark blue Mercedes sedan

roared up a gravel path toward the main road. I ran to a police sedan parked on the grass, started it up, and gave chase. There wasn't time to tell anybody

wondered how a police car was going to keep up with a souped-up Mercedes. Probably not too well. No, probably not at all.

what I was doing. Not even Sandy. I

I stayed with the powerful CL55 out of Cap-Ferrat, all the way to the Basse Corniche. I nearly killed myself, and maybe a few others, on the twisty road, but I didn't lose whoever was speeding in front of me.

Who the hell was in the car? Why was somebody running? Could it be the Wolf?

but it was heavy. The lights from a tow truck up ahead indicated that some poor driver had jackknifed on this winding road. That was my one long-shot hope. The traffic was slowing down the Benz.

Traffic toward Monaco was moving,

But suddenly the Mercedes swung around and headed west.

The sports sedan was moving very

fast past an endless array of billboards and restaurant signs. And so was I.

I rounded a curve, and the whole of the bay of Villefranche-sur-Mer appeared in all its inimitable beauty and splendor, the moon large and full in the sky. The city rose above the bay, which was filled with sailboats and yachts, like a rich kid's bathtub. The Mercedes spun a speed of a hundred miles per hour. I thought I remembered from somewhere that the car had close to five hundred horsepower. It sure seemed like it.

Then we were entering the old port

The Mercedes barely avoided a

down a slick, sloping hill, sometimes at

of Nice, and I began to close the gap behind the sedan. The narrow streets were surprisingly crowded, especially around the bars and nightclubs, which seemed everywhere now, thank God.

drunken group coming out of the Etoile Filante nightclub. And then, horn blaring, I roared through the same crowd, the pedestrians

cursing and shaking fists at me.

The Mercedes made a sharp right—

onto the N7, the Moyenne Corniche, a higher road.

I followed as best I could, knowing

that I would probably lose him now. Lose who, though? Who was in the blue Mercedes?

and winding. We were headed back toward Monaco, but the traffic was light this way, and the Mercedes was

The way up was incredibly steep

effortlessly picking up speed. The driver had known to go backward in order to go forward—much faster—at a speed the police sedan couldn't possibly match.

After about two kilometers I was pretty sure I would lose him. We were back in Villefranche, but the highest part

of town. The view down onto Cap-

Ferrat and Beaulieu was breathtaking, and I couldn't avoid looking; even at this speed it filled my eyes like a painting.

I couldn't let him get away, and I

pushed the police car up close to a hundred again. How long could I possibly keep up? There was a tunnel, dimness, then

almost total darkness—and at the end of the tunnel the astonishing sight of a medieval village perched high on a hillside.

EZEread a sign, and I wished I could go easy.

Just past the village, the road

became even more dangerous. It was as if the Moyenne Corniche were taped onto the side of the cliffs. Down below,

gray.

I could smell oranges and lemons in the air. My senses were sharp. Fear can do that.

the color of the sea seemed to be changing from azure to opal to silver-

I was losing the Mercedes, though, so I made the only move I could. Instead of slowing around the next curve, I accelerated

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 111

I began to gain on the Mercedes and I kept my foot pressed to the floor. Are you suicidal? I wondered about myself.

Suddenly the Mercedes skidded all the way across the opposite lane. It struck the side of the mountain, a glancing blow, but very damaging to the car at that speed. Then it swerved back and forth on the road, across both lanes. It caromed off the rocks again. The blue sedan suddenly took off into the sky.

It was airborne, falling toward the sea.

I braked to the side of the road and jumped from my car. I saw the Mercedes hit the side of the cliff twice, then roll couldn't get down there from where I was. Couldn't climb down, anyway.

I didn't see any movement from the

onto the lower highway far below. I

wreck. Whoever was inside the Mercedes had to be dead. But who is it?

I got back in the police car I had

commandeered at the estate. It took me close to ten minutes to make my way to

the lower highway and the scene of the wreck. French police and an ambulance had already arrived and so had many early-morning onlookers.

As I climbed from my car, I could see that the body hadn't been removed from the wreckage. Medical workers were leaning inside the car and seemed

to be working frantically. They were

talking to whoever had been driving. Who was it? One of them shouted, "He's still

alive. One male! He's alive in here!" I started to run toward the wreckage to get a look at the driver. Who? Could

he talk to me? I glanced back up at the Moyenne and wondered how the driver could have survived the long fall and crash. The Wolf was supposed to be a tough guy. This tough?

I flashed my creds, and the police surrounding the wreck let me move on.

Then I could see. I knew who it was trapped in the wreck. I couldn't believe it, though. I just couldn't believe what I was seeing with my own eyes.

My heart was thumping loudly,

what was left of it. I came up to the smoldering, overturned car. I knelt on the rocky ground and leaned forward. "It's Alex," I said.

The car's driver looked at me and

racing out of control. So was my mind,

tried to focus. His body was trapped inside the crumpled Mercedes. He'd been crushed by metal everywhere below the shoulders. Just awful to see.

But Martin Lodge was alive, and he was hanging on. He seemed to want to say something, and I moved closer. "It's Alex," I said again. I turned my head so

that my ear was near his mouth.

I needed to know the identity of the Wolf. I had so many questions.

Wolf. I had so many questions.

Martin whispered, "It's all for

nothing. Your manhunt is useless. I'm not the Wolf. I never even saw him."

Then he died on me and everyone

Then he died on me, and everyone else who was waiting for an answer.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 112

The Lodge family had been taken into protective custody back in England. We all felt that if the Wolf suspected that the wife or any of the children had been told anything incriminating, they would be targets. Maybe he'd kill them just to be safe, or because he felt like killing somebody that day.

The next morning I flew to London and met with the police at Scotland Yard, specifically Lodge's superior, a man named John Mortenson. First, he reported that none of the survivors at Cap-Ferrat seemed to know anything about the Wolf, or even who Martin Lodge had been.

"There is a new development, a little wrinkle," he told me then.

I leaned back in a leather lounger

with a view of Buckingham Palace. "At this point, I'm not surprised about anything, John. Tell me what's going on.

This is about the Lodge family?"

He nodded, sighed, and then began.
"It starts with Klára Lodge. Klára

Cernohosska, actually. Let me begin

with her. It turns out Martin was on the team that brought a defector named Edward Morozov out of Russia back in 'ninety-three. Martin worked with the

American CIA, with Cahill and Hancock, and also Thomas Weir. Only there was no Edward Morozov. He was an unidentified KGB defector whose name we don't know. We think that it was the Wolf."

"You started by saying something

about Martin's wife, Klára. What about her?"

"For one thing, she's not Czech. She came out of Russia with the man called Morozov. She was an assistant to a KGB

chief, and also our main source of information in Moscow. She and Lodge apparently got cozy during the transfer,

and then she was relocated to England. He had her identity changed, got rid of the records. Then he married her. How about that?"

"And she knows who the Wolf is, what he looks like? Is that it?"

"We don't know what Klára knows.

She won't talk to us. She might talk to you, though."

I sat back, shook my head. "Why me? I met her only once."

Mortenson shrugged, then he gave a

half smile. "She says her husband trusted you. You believe that? What the hell is that supposed to mean? Why would she trust you if you mat her only once?"

that supposed to mean? Why would she trust you, if you met her only once?"
Unfortunately, I had no idea.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 113

What remained of the Lodge family was being kept under wraps in a small town called Shepton Mallet, which was about 120 miles west of London. Rolling valleys, lots of green countryside, perfect for hiding them, at least temporarily.

converted farmhouse on a "no through" road outside of town. The land was fairly flat there, and anything approaching could be seen for miles. Besides, this was an armed compound, heavily armed.

The Lodges were staying in a

I arrived at about six that evening. The inside of the farmhouse was

but I had dinner with the family in a cramped bunker that was located belowground.

Klára didn't cook the meal as she had in London, and I wondered if she

pleasant, with lots of antique furniture,

approved of the fare. I doubted it. The food was dreadful, worse than airplane fare. "No míchaná vejce on the menu," I finally tried as a joke for her.

"You remember our breakfast in Battersea, even the correct pronunciation. That's good, Alex," Klára said. "You're very observant. Martin

When the meal was over, the children—Hana, Daniela, Jozef—were sent to their room to do homework.

said you were a good agent."

cigarette. She took long puffs and inhaled deeply. "Homework?" I asked. "Here? Tonight?" "It's good to have discipline, habits

Klára sat with me and smoked a

to fall back on. I think it is. So you were with Martin? When he died?" she asked. "What did he say to you? Please tell me."

I considered my response. What did Klára want to hear? And what should I tell her?

"He said that he wasn't the Wolf. Is that true. Klára?" "Anything else? What else did he tell

you?"

I thought about telling Klára he'd

Probably I couldn't. "No, Klára. That's all it was. There wasn't much time. Only a few seconds. He didn't suffer too long. He didn't seem to be in pain. I think he was in shock."

She nodded. "Martin thought I could trust you. He said it was your flaw, actually. He would never say anything sentimental, not even with his dying breath."

talked about her and the children, but I didn't. I didn't want to lie to her.

breath."

I stared into Klára's deep brown eyes, which seemed surprisingly alert.

"How do you feel about that?" I

asked.
She laughed. "It's why I loved him."

She had things to tell me that night in

was begun between the two of us. Or rather, I got to listen to her demands.

"I want safe passage out of England for myself and the children. New identities, and we get to keep some savings to live on. I'll tell you where we want to live, but not right now. That will

the English countryside. A negotiation

"Prague?" I asked. It was a small joke.

come a little later."

"No, definitely not Prague, Alex. And not Russia, either. Or anywhere in America, for that matter. I'll tell you where, when the time comes. But first, let's decide on what I have to give you to guarantee our safe passage out of England."

a lot," I said. "You have to give up the Wolf. But can you do that, Klára? What do you know? Who is he? Where is he?

"Oh, that's easy. You have to give us

What did Martin tell you?"

Finally she smiled. "Oh, he told me everything. Martin adored me."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 114

The Wolf flew his own plane into Teterboro Airport in the northern corner of New Jersey. A black Range Rover was waiting there for him, and he took it into New York City, a city he'd always despised. The traffic was bad, as usual, and it took him as long to get from Teterboro to Manhattan as it had to fly to the metropolitan area from New Hampshire.

The doctor's office was situated in a brownstone on Sixty-third Street just off Fifth. The Wolf parked the Range Rover and hurried inside.

It was a little past nine in the morning. He didn't bother to check if he

do about it now. Besides, he felt he had this morning sufficiently covered. As usual, there was a plan for every eventuality.

was being watched. He didn't think so, but if he was, there was nothing he could

The nurse on duty for the plastic surgery was also there to act as a receptionist. She and the hotshot surgeon would be the only ones present for the procedures. He had insisted on a staff of two and that the office be closed to other patients for the day.

"There are a few legal forms for you to look over and sign," the nurse told him with a tight smile. She might not have known who he was, but she suspected there had to be a very good

mention that she was being paid handsomely to work this shift. "No, I will sign nothing, thank you," he said, then pushed past her and went

reason for this much secrecy, not to

looking for Dr. Levine. He found her in a small operating theater that was already brightly lit, and very cold.

"Reminds me of Siberia. A gulag I

spent time in one winter," he said.

The doctor turned, and she was

mildly attractive, slender, well preserved, probably in her early forties. He could fuck her, in a pinch, but he wasn't in the mood right then. Maybe

later.
"Dr. Levine," he said, and shook hands with the surgeon. "I'm ready, and I

hours. So let's begin. Now."

"That's not possible," Dr. Levine started to object.

don't want to be here more than a few

The Wolf raised his hand to silence her, and it almost seemed as if he might actually strike the doctor. She flinched.

"I won't be needing general anesthesia. As I said, I'm ready. So are you."

"Sir, you have no idea what you're

saying. None, I assure you. The procedures we have scheduled include a face, neck, and brow lift. Liposuction.

Jaw and cheek implants. And a nose job. The pain will be unbearable. Trust me on that."

"No, it will be bearable. I've known

much worse pain," said the Wolf. "I will allow you only to monitor my vital statistics. There will be no more stupid discussion about anesthesia. Now, get me ready for the procedures. Or else." "Or else what?" Dr. Levine bristled.

The small woman rocked back on her heels. "Just or else," answered the Wolf.

"That covers a great deal of territory, don't you think? It covers pain beyond what you believe I cannot endure. Can

you, Dr. Levine? Can your two children, Martin and Amy, endure such pain? Or your husband, Jerrold? Let's begin. I have a schedule to keep."

Always a schedule.

And a plan.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 115

He never once screamed, never made a sound during any of the grueling procedures, and neither the surgeon nor the nurse could comprehend what they were witnessing. The patient seemed to have no feeling at all. As males often do, he bled a great deal during the operations, and there was already a lot of deep purple bruising on his face. The pain he endured during the hour-and-ahalf rhinoplasty, or nose job, was the worst by far, especially when large chunks of bone and cartilage were removed without even a topical anesthetic.

At the conclusion of the rhinoplasty,

Levine not to stand, but he did anyway.

His neck felt tight and tender, and

the final procedure, he was told by Dr.

there was Betadine all over his scalp and throat. "Not bad," he rasped. "I've experienced much worse." "Do not blow your nose. For at least

a week," the doctor insisted, seemingly trying to maintain her dignity and a tenuous sense of control.

The Wolf reached into his trousers

and produced a handkerchief, but then put it back. "Just kidding," he said, then frowned. "Do you have any sense of humor, Doctor?"

"You can't drive, either," said the doctor. "That I will not allow. For the sake of others."

leave my vehicle here on the street to be carjacked. Let me get your money. It's become boring to be here with you."

It was then, as he walked to fetch his briefcase, that the Russian staggered slightly—and also got the first look at

himself in a mirror, his incredibly bruised and swollen face, at least what

"You do nice work," he said, and

showed around the bandages.

so much.

of it, putting others in jeopardy. I'll just

"No, of course not. I wouldn't think

laughed.

He opened the briefcase and pulled out a Beretta with silencer. He shot the astonished nurse in the face, twice, then turned to Dr. Levine, who had hurt him

of advice you wish to impart?"

"My children. Please don't kill me,"
the doctor begged. "You know I have children."

"They'll be better off without you. I think so, bitch. I bet they would agree."

He shot her through the heart. A mercy killing, he thought to himself,

especially after the way she'd tortured him. Plus, he just didn't like her, the

"Any other things I should or shouldn't do?" he asked. "Any last bits

humorless bitch.

Finally, the Wolf left the office and walked to his Range Rover. He was thinking that no one knew what he looked like now. Not a single person anywhere.

And that got him laughing, almost uncontrollably. This was his piece of the

puzzle.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 116

"There he is—has to be."

"He's laughing! What's so funny? Look at him. Can you believe it?"

"He looks like he was scalped, then had his skin flayed," Ned Mahoney said when the heavily bandaged man in a gray overcoat emerged from the brownstone. "He looks like a goddamn ghoul."

"Don't underestimate him," I reminded Ned. "And don't forget, he is a

ghoul."

We were watching the Wolf—at least, the man we believed to be the Wolf—as he left a plastic surgeon's office on the East Side of Manhattan. We had just gotten there, less than sixty

underestimating him, Alex. That's why we have half a dozen teams getting ready to pounce on him. If we'd gotten here sooner, we could have grabbed him inside the doctor's office."

I nodded. "At least we're here. It

was a complicated negotiation in England. Klára Lodge and her children

seconds before. Almost missed him

"Don't worry, I'm not

again.

are somewhere in northern Africa now. She did her part."

"So the Wolf has had a tracking device under his shoulder blade since he

came out of Russia? That's the story?"
"We're here, aren't we? According
to Klára, Martin Lodge knew where he

"We're ready to go, then? We take him?" "We're ready. I'm ready." Jesus, was

was all along. That kept Lodge alive."

I ready. I wanted to take this bastard down so badly. I couldn't wait to see the look on his face.

Mahoney spoke into the mike

attached to his headset. "Close on him

now. And remember, he's extremely

You got that right, Neddo.

dangerous."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 117

The black Range Rover was stopped at a light on the corner of Fifth Avenue and Fifty-ninth Street. Dark sedans pulled up on both sides. A third car blocked off the intersection. Agents jumped out of the cars. We had him!

Gunfire suddenly erupted from a white Hummer in front of the Range Rover. The doors of the Hummer flew open. Three men with automatic weapons came out firing.

"Where the hell did they come from?" Mahoney yelled into his mike. "Everybody down!"

We were already out of our car and running toward the gunfight. Ned fired

bodyguards. I hit another, and a third bodyguard opened up on us. Meanwhile, the Wolf was out of the Range Rover and running down Fifth

and took down one of the Wolf's

Avenue, staying out in the street with the cars. The condition of his face made him look as though he'd already been shot, or maybe badly burned in a fire. People on

the sidewalk were hitting the pavement because of the gunshots coming from

everywhere. Several were screaming uncontrollably. How far did the Wolf think he could get, looking the way he did? In New York City, maybe far!

More gummen appeared, seemingly

More gunmen appeared, seemingly out of nowhere. More of his bodyguards. He had certainly brought backup. Had

we brought enough?

And then the Wolf ducked into a store on Fifth. Mahoney and I followed

him. I didn't even notice what store it was. Upscale. Glitzy. Fifth Avenue, for God's sake!

The Wolf did the unthinkable then.

Although nothing he did completely surprised me anymore. His right arm shot forward and released a dark object into the air. I watched it start to tumble.

I shouted, "Grenade! Everybody down! Get down! Grenade!"

A powerful explosion at the front of the store blew out two massive picture windows. Shoppers were hurt. The smoke was very thick and dark. Everybody inside the store was screaming, including the clerks behind nearly every counter.

I never lost sight of the Wolf, never

lost my focus on him. No matter what he did, no matter what the danger, he couldn't be allowed to get away this time. The cost was too high. This was the man who had held the world hostage.

He'd already murdered thousands.

Mahoney ran down one aisle and I took another. The Wolf appeared to be

headed for an exit onto a side street. I'd lost track of where we were. Fifty-fifth Street? Fifty-sixth?

"He doesn't get out!" Ned shouted

over to me.
"You've got that right."

We were getting closer and I could

looked fiercer than I could have imagined. Worse, he looked desperate, capable of anything. But we already knew that He yelled, "I'll kill everybody in the

see the Wolf's face. With all the bandages, the bruising and swelling, he

store!" Neither Mahoney nor I answered; we just kept coming. But we didn't doubt

what he'd said He grabbed a small blond girl away from what looked to be a nanny. "I'll kill

her. I'll kill the little girl. She's dead! I'll

kill her!" We kept coming.

He held the toddler against his chest. His blood was dripping all over her.

wildly in his arms. "I'll kill —" Ned and I fired at almost the same

The girl was screaming, squirming

time—two shots and the Wolf stumbled backward, letting go of the girl. She fell to the floor, then got up screeching and ran to safety.

So did the Wolf. Out the nearest side door and onto the street.

"He's wearing a vest—has to be." "We'll shoot him in the head," I said.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 118

We chased him east on Fifty-fifth Street, along with a couple of our agents and two fleet-footed New York City policemen. If any of the Wolf's bodyguards had survived the bloody shoot-out on Fifth Avenue, they'd lost track of their boss in the shuffle inside the store. They were nowhere to be seen now.

Still, the Wolf looked as though he knew where he was going. Was that possible? How could he have planned for this? He probably couldn't have—so we'd get him now, right? I couldn't let myself believe otherwise—that all of this could come to nothing.

We had him in our sights. He was right there in front of us.

Suddenly he turned into a building,

redbrick, eight to ten stories high. Did he know someone there? More backup? A trap? What?

There was security inside; at least, there had been. But the uniformed guard was dead now, shot in the head, lying facedown and bleeding on the glossy marble floor.

The elevators were all busy, red lights flashing the floors—eight, four, three—all going up.

"He's not getting out of here. That's settled," Mahoney said.

"We can't know that, Ned."

"He can't fucking fly, can he?"

"No, but who the hell knows what else he can do. He came in here for a reason."

Mahoney assigned agents to wait for

systematically check the floors from bottom to top. Reinforcements were on the way from the NYPD. There would be dozens of cops here soon. Then

of the elevators, then to

hundreds. The Wolf was in the building.

Mahoney and I took to the stairs in pursuit.

"Where do we go? How far?"

"Where do we go? How far?"

"The roof. It's the only other way out

of here."
"You really think he's got a plan?

How, Alex?"
I shook my head; I had no way of

weak; maybe he was even delirious. Or maybe he had a plan. Hell, he'd always had a plan before. So up we went, all the way. The top

knowing. He was bleeding, had to be

Wolf as we peeked out of the stairwell. We quickly checked the offices; no one had seen him—and they sure would have remembered if they had.

floor was nine, and we didn't see the

"In the back. There's stairs up to the roof," someone told us in a law office.

Ned Mahoney and I climbed more stairs, then we stepped outside into bright daylight. We didn't see the Wolf. There was a single-story structure, like a small hat on top of the old building. Water tower? The super's office?

We tried the door; it was locked.

"He has to be here somewhere.
Unless he jumped," Ned said.

Then we saw him coming around

from behind the tower. "I didn't jump, Mr. Mahoney. And I thought I told you not to work on this case. I think I was clear. Put down your guns right now."

I stepped forward. "I brought him here."

"Of course you did. You're the indefatigable, don't-give-up, relentless Dr. Cross. That's why you're so predictable, and useful."

Suddenly a New York City policeman stepped out of the same trapdoor opening to the roof that we had used. He saw the Wolf and fired.

didn't stop him. He was wearing a vest, had to be. The Russian growled like a bear and charged the cop, waving both arms over his head.

He grabbed the surprised officer and

He hit the Wolf in the chest, but it

picked him up. There was nothing Ned or I could do. Next thing, he hurled the man off the roof.

The Wolf started to race toward the

other side of the rooftop, and he seemed genuinely insane. What was he doing? Suddenly I thought I knew. The building to the south was close enough so that he was going to jump for it. Then, coming in from the west, I saw a helicopter. For him? Was that the escape plan? Don't let this be happening.

I ran after him. So did Mahoney. "Stop! Stop right there!" He was running in crazy zigzags

away from us. We fired but didn't hit him with the first shots.

Then the Wolf was airborne, both his arms flailing—and he was going to make

it to the other rooftop with room to spare. "You bastard, no!" Ned yelled.

"No!"

and squeezed the trigger four times.

I stopped running, aimed carefully,

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 119

The Wolf kept pumping his legs and seemed almost to be running on thin air, but then he started to drop. His arms reached out toward the edge of the other building. His fingers reached for the roof.

Mahoney and I ran up to the edge of our building. Could the Wolf get out of this one? Somehow, he always found a way. Except this time—I knew I'd hit him in the throat. He had to be drowning in his own blood.

"Fall, you fuck!" Ned screamed at him.

"He's not going to make it," I said.

And he didn't. The Russian's body

sound, never screamed out. Not a sound came from him.

Mahoney yelled down at him. "Hey, Wolf! Hey, Wolfman! Go to hell!"

fell, and he didn't fight it, didn't make a

The fall looked as if it had been shot in slow motion, but then he hit the ground in the alleyway between the

buildings. Hit it hard. I stared down at the Wolf's mangled body, the bandaged face, and I felt satisfied for the first time in a long while. I felt fulfilled and whole. We'd gotten him, and he deserved to die like that, squashed like a

bug on the pavement.

Then Ned Mahoney started to clap and whoop and dance around like a complete madman. I didn't join in, but I

down there deserved this fate, if anyone ever did. Stone-cold dead in an alleyway.

"He didn't scream," I finally said.

"Couldn't even give us that."

knew what he was feeling. The man

Mahoney shrugged his wide shoulders. "I don't care if he did or not. Here we are up here, there he is down

with the garbage. Maybe there's some justice after all. Well, maybe not," Ned said, and laughed, putting his arm around me and squeezing.

"We won," I said to him. "Damnit,

we finally won, Neddy."

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 120

We won!

The next morning I flew back to Quantico in a Bell helicopter with Ned Mahoney and some of his stellar crew. They were celebrating the Wolf's demise at HRT over in Quantico, but I wanted to get home. I'd told Nana to keep the kids away from school because we were celebrating.

We won!

I let myself decompress for some of the car ride from Quantico to Washington. When I finally got to the house, when I could see it up ahead, I started to feel closer to normal, almost myself, or at least somebody I surprise them.

We won!

The front door wasn't locked, and I went inside. A few lights were on, but I

didn't see anybody yet. Maybe they're

Keeping very quiet, I made my way

going to surprise me?

recognized. No one had come out onto the porch yet, so Nana and the kids hadn't seen me arrive. I decided to

back to the kitchen. The lights were on—plates and silverware had been laid out for lunch—but nobody was there, either.

Kind of strange. Just a little bit off kilter. Rosie the cat came meowing from somewhere, rubbing up against me.

Finally I called out, "I'm home. Your daddy's home. Where is everybody? I'm

home from the wars."

I hurried upstairs, but nobody was there. I checked for notes that might have

been left for me. Nothing.

I ran downstairs. I looked out back, then up and down Fifth Street in front of the house. Not a soul in sight anywhere. Where were Nana and the kids? They knew I was coming.

I went back inside and made a few phone calls to places Nana and the kids might be. But Nana almost always left a note when she went out with the kids, even for an hour or so, and they'd been expecting me.

Suddenly I felt sick. I waited another half an hour before I contacted some people at the Hoover Building, starting

with Tony Woods in the director's office. In the meantime, I'd looked around the house again, found no sign of any kind of disturbance.

A team of technical people arrived,

and shortly afterward one of them approached me in the kitchen. "There are footprints out in the yard, probably male. Some dirt was recently tracked into the house. Could have been repairmen, or a delivery service, but it's definitely fresh."

That was all they found that afternoon, not another clue, not one.

Sampson and Billie came over in the evening, and we sat together and waited, at least for a call, something to go on, something to give me hope. But no call

morning, Sampson finally went home. Billie had left about ten.

I stayed up all night—but nothing, no

came, and sometime after two in the

contact. No word at all about Nana and the kids. I talked to Jamilla on my cell phone, and it helped, but not enough. Nothing could have helped that night.

Finally, early in the morning, I stood at the front door bleary-eyed and stared up and down the street. It occurred to me that this had always been my worst fear, maybe everybody's worst fear, to be all alone, with nobody, and to have those you love the most in terrible danger.

We lost.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 121

The e-mail came on the fifth day. I almost couldn't bear to read it. I thought that I might throw up as I stared down at the words.

Alex, I read.

Surprise, dear boy.

I am actually not as cruel or heartless a person as you might think I am. The really cruel ones, the truly unreasonable ones, the ones we should all fear, are mostly in your own United States and in Western Europe. The money I have now will help stop them, help stop their greed. Do you believe that? You should. Why not? Why the hell not?

and for Hana, Daniela, and Jozef. We owe you something, and I pay my debts. To me, "you are a gnat, but at least you

I thank you for what you did for me,

are a gnat." Your family will be returned today, but now we're even. You will never see me again. I don't want to see you, either. If I do, you will die. That is

Klára Cernohosska, Wolf

a promise.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 122

I couldn't let it go, couldn't and wouldn't. The Wolf had invaded my house, taken my family, even though they had been returned unharmed. It could happen again.

Over the next few weeks I tested,

then strained, the new cooperative relationship between the Bureau and the CIA. I got Ron Burns to put even more stress on the situation. I traveled out to CIA headquarters in Langley more than a dozen times, talked to everybody from junior analysts to the new director, James Dowd. I wanted to know about Thomas Weir and the KGB agent he'd

helped bring out of Russia. I needed to

know everything that they knew. Was that possible? I doubted it, but that didn't stop me from trying.

Then one day I was called up to

Burns's office. When I arrived, I found Burns and the new CIA director waiting

for me in his conference room. Something was up. This was going to be good—or very, very bad.

"Come on in, Alex," said Burns,

cordial, as he often was. "We need to talk."

I stepped inside and sat across from

the two heavies, both in shirttails, looking as if they had just come out of a long and difficult work session. About what? The Wolf? Something else that I didn't want to hear about?

"Director Dowd wants to say a few things to you," said Burns. "I do, Alex," said Dowd, a New

York lawyer who'd been an unexpected choice for CIA director. He had started in the New York Police Department,

then gone into a lucrative private

practice for several years. According to rumors, there were things that none of us knew, or wanted to know, about Dowd and his years in private practice.

"I'm just finding my way around out

at Langley," he said, "and actually, this exercise has helped. We've spent a great deal of time and effort digging into everything about Director Weir."

Dowd looked over at Burns. "Just about all of it is good, an excellent

Christyakov was recruited and then brought out of Russia in 1990. This man was the Wolf. We're fairly sure about that. He was transported to England, where he met with a few agents, including Martin Lodge. Then he was moved to a house outside Washington. His identity was known only to a handful of people. Most of them are dead now,

"Finally, he was moved to a city of

his choosing—Paris, where he met up

"A Russian by the name of Anton

record of service. But this kind of digging into old records isn't appreciated by some of the 'old warrior' types out in Virginia. Frankly, I don't

give a shit what they think.

including Weir.

with his family: mother and father, wife, two young sons, ages nine and twelve. "Alex, they lived two blocks from

the Louvre, on one of the streets that was destroyed a few weeks ago. His entire family was killed there in 'ninety-four, but not Christyakov himself. We believe

the attack may have been orchestrated by the Russian government. We don't know for certain. But somebody leaked where he was living to somebody who didn't

want him to continue living. The attack may have taken place on the bridge across the Seine that was destroyed." "He blamed the CIA and Tom Weir" Burns said "And he blamed the

"He blamed the CIA and Tom Weir," Burns said. "And he blamed the governments that were involved. Maybe he went mad after that—who the hell knows. He joined the Mafiya and rose quickly. Here in America, probably in New York." Burns stopped. Dowd didn't add

anything more. They were both looking at me.

"So it's not Vlére. What also do we

"So it's not Klára. What else do we know about Christyakov?"

Dowd raised his hands with both

palms up. "There are notes in our

records, but precious few. He was known by some Mafiya leaders, but they seem to be dead now, too. Maybe the current Mafiya 'big man' in Brooklyn knows something. There's another possible contact in Paris. We're working

a couple of angles in Moscow."

I shook my head. "I don't care how

long it takes. I want him. Tell me everything there is."

"He was close to his sons. Maybe that's why he spared your family. Alex."

that's why he spared your family, Alex," said Burns. "And mine."

"He spared my family to show how

powerful he is, how superior to the rest of us."
"He squeezes a rubber ball," said

Dowd, "A handball. Black."

I didn't follow at first. "I'm sorry,

what?"

"One of his sons gave him a rubber

handball before the boy died. A birthday present. In one of the notes we have, it says that Christyakov squeezes the ball when he gets angry. He's also said to favor beards. He's celibate now,

pieces, Alex. That's what we have. I'm sorry."

So was I, but it didn't matter. I was

according to the rumors, anyway. It's all

going to get him.

He squeezes a rubber ball.

He favors beards.

His family was murdered.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 123

Six weeks later I traveled to New York, my fifth out-of-town trip in a row. Tolya Bykov had been at or near the top of the Red Mafiya gangs in New York, specifically the Brighton Beach area, for the past few years. He had been a Mafiya head in Moscow and was the most powerful leader to come to America. I was going to see him.

On a sunny, unseasonably warm day, Ned Mahoney and I made the journey out to Mill Neck on Long Island's Gold Coast. The area we drove through was heavily wooded, served by narrow roads, with no sidewalks anywhere.

We arrived at the Bykov compound

had a warrant. There were bodyguards posted everywhere, and I wondered how Tolya Bykov could live like this. Maybe because he had to in order to remain alive.

with a dozen agents—unannounced. We

The house itself was very large, a three-story Colonial. It had incredible water views across the sound all the way to Connecticut. There was a Gunite pool with a waterfall, a boathouse and dock. The wages of sin?

Bykov was waiting in his den for our talk. I was surprised at how tired, how old, he looked. He had small beady eyes in a pocked face rolling with fat. He was grossly overweight, probably close to three hundred pounds. His breathing was

labored and he had a hacking cough.

I'd been told that he spoke no English.

"I want to know about the man called the Wolf," I said as I sat down across from him at a plain wooden table. One of our agents from the New York office translated, a young Russian American.

Tolya Bykov scratched the back of his neck, then shook his head back and forth, finally muttering several Russian words between a clenched jaw.

The translator listened, then looked at me. "He says you're wasting his time, and yours. Why don't you leave right now? He knows 'Peter and the Wolf,' no other. Wolves."

"We're not going to leave. The FBI,

find the Wolf. Tell him that." The agent spoke in Russian, and Bykov laughed in his face. The Russian

the CIA, we're going to be in Mr. Bykov's face, in his business, until we

said something, and the sentences mentioned Chris Rock "He says you're funnier than Chris

Rock. He likes Chris Rock, political comedians in general." I stood up, nodded to Bykov, then

walked out of the room. I didn't expect too much more from the first meeting,

just an introduction. I would be back, again and again if necessary. This was the only case I was working now. I was learning to be patient, very patient.

Alex Cross 10 -London Bridges

Chapter 124

Minutes later, I was leaving the large house, walking side by side with Ned Mahoney. We were laughing about the first interview—what the hell, might as well laugh.

I saw something, and did a double take—saw it again.

"Ned, Jesus. Look."

"What?" His head swiveled around, but he didn't see what I saw.

Then I was running ahead on legs that felt unsteady.

"What? Alex, what is it?" Ned yelled behind me. "Alex?"

"It's him!" I said.

My eyes were pinned on one of the

watching us watch him. My eyes dropped to his hand. In the hand—a black ball, an old one. He was squeezing it, and I knew—I just knew-it had to be the handball given to the Wolf by his small son

before he died. The man with the ball

had a beard. His eyes looked at mine.

Then he started to run.

bodyguard types at the compound. Black suit jacket and shirt, no overcoat. He was standing under a large evergreen,

I yelled back at Ned. "That's him. He's the Wolf!" I sprinted across the lawn, moving

faster than I had in a while. I trusted that Ned was behind me.

I saw the Russian man jump into a

bright red convertible; then he started it up. Oh no, God, no! I thought.

But I tumbled into the front seat

before he put it into gear. I hit him with a short, powerful punch to the nose. Blood gushed all over his black shirt and jacket. I knew I'd broken his nose. I hit him again, square on the jaw.

I shoved open the driver-side door. He looked at me, and his eyes were coldly intelligent, like no eyes I'd ever

seen, nothing so desolate. Inhuman. That was what the French president had called him.

Was he the real Tolya Bykov? It didn't matter to me now. He was the

didn't matter to me now. He was the Wolf—I could see it in those eyes, the confidence, arrogance, but most of all,

"The ball," he said. "You knew about the ball. My son gave it to me. I congratulate you."

down hard on something inside his mouth. I thought I knew what had

He gave a strange half smile, then bit

the hatred for me and everyone else.

happened. I tried desperately to force open his mouth. His jaw was clamped tightly shut, and suddenly the Russian's eyes were wide, incredibly big and full of pain. Poison. He'd bitten into poison.

Then his mouth opened and he roared full voice. White foam and spit

ran over his lips and down his chin. He roared again, and his body began to convulse. I couldn't hold him down any longer. I pushed myself up, backed away

from his flopping body.

He began to gag and to claw at his throat. The convulsing, the dying went on for several awful minutes, and there was

for several awful minutes, and there was nothing I could do and nothing I wanted to do, except watch.

And then it happened: the Wolf died

in the front seat of the convertible, another of his expensive cars.

When it was over, I bent and picked up the rubber handball. I put it in my

up the rubber handball. I put it in my pocket. It was what killers I've caught call a trophy.

It was over and I was going home,

wasn't I? I had things to think about, and so much to change about my life. I had the uncomfortable thought: I am taking trophies now, too.

important thought: Damon, Jannie, Little Alex, Nana.

Home.

But I had another, much more

The Wolf is dead. I saw him die.

I kept telling myself that until

I kept telling myself that until I finally believed it.